

THE
VYUVUHARU MUYOOKHU,

AN AUTHENTIC AND COMPLETE

T R E A T I S E,

EMBRACING ALL THE HEADS OF

H I N D O O L A W,

Applicable to the Topics of

Civil and Criminal Jurisprudence,

AND

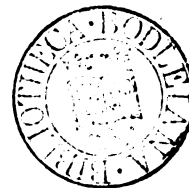
OF EXTENSIVE AUTHORITY IN WESTERN INDIA.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL.

BY

HARRY BORRADAILE, ESQUIRE,

OF THE BOMBAY CIVIL SERVICE.



Published under the authority of the Bombay Government.

S U R A T:

Printed at the Mission Press.

1827.

DEDICATION.

TO THE HONORABLE

MOUNTSTUART ELPHINSTONE,

Governor, &c. &c.

AND PRESIDENT IN COUNCIL

OF

Bombay and its Dependencies,

THIS WORK,

FORMING BUT A SMALL PART OF HIS WISE AND ENLIGHTENED PLANS

FOR THE BETTER ADMINISTRATION

OF

Civil and Criminal Justice,

AMONG THE NATIVE SUBJECTS UNDER THIS PRESIDENCY,

IS, WITH HIS PERMISSION,

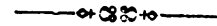
RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED,

BY HIS GREATLY OBLIGED,

And very obedient humble Servant.

The Translator.

CONTENTS.



CHAPTER I.

PROCEEDINGS AT LAW,—[*Vyuvuharu Matreka.*]

SECTION I.

DEFINITION of Justice.—Heads of Law. page 1. Constitution of a Court. p. 2. Officers of the Court,—Examiner or chief Judge. p. 3. Assessors and others, p. 4. Their respective duties. p. 5. Court hours and days.—Disagreement between law and equity, or two texts of law. p. 6. Customs of the country, &c. to be upheld.—Examples.—Reference to professional men. p. 7. The first notice of suit or injury.—Arrest or Duress. p. 8. Persons exempt from process.—Those not exempt. p. 9. Contempt.—Commencement of the Pleadings.—Attorneys permitted. p. 10. Exceptions.—Requisites of a good Plaint. p. 11. Correction of it.—Plaints inadmissible. p. 12. Exceptions.—The answer.—Answers enumerated. p. 13. Inadmissible answers.—Onus probandi. p. 14. Exhibition of proof.—Pleadings enumerated.—Retort prohibited. p. 17. Exception.—Technical errors remediable.—Receipt of Evidence.—Sureties. p. 18. Inadmissible.—Confinement in default of surety.—False Plaints. p. 19.

SECTION II.

OF PROOF IN GENERAL,—[*Prumanum*].

Nature of proof.—Proof, by deeds. page 20. By witnesses.—And by possession.—Ordeal, when lawful. p. 21. Matters of choice.—Explanation. —Total absence of evidence. p. 22.

C O N T E N T S.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE DIFFERENT MODES OF PROOF.



SECTION I.

OF EVIDENCE BY WRITINGS,—[*Lekhyum*.]

Evidence by writings.—Enumeration of them, viz. Deeds of Partition, Gift, page 23. Purchase, Pledge, Agreement, Slavery, and Debt.—Likewise of Purification, Peace, Boundaries, Bail. p. 24. and Acquittances. Execution of writings. p. 25. Royal deeds, viz. of Gift, Favor and Decrees. p. 26. Their execution.—Royal orders, and private correspondence.—Renewal and proof of writings. p. 27. Invalid deeds. p. 28.

SECTION II.

ON EVIDENCE BY POSSESSION,—[*Bhookti*].

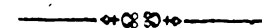
Evidence by possession. p. 28. When it constitutes Title, and how. p. 29. Proof of it; of whom required.—Opponent's Argument. p. 30. Refuted.—Possession invalid. p. 31.

SECTION III.

ON EVIDENCE BY WITNESSES,—[*Sakshi*].

Evidence by witnesses. page 31. Their nature and number.—One witness when legal. p. 32. Requisite qualifications. p. 33. Inadmissible witnesses. p. 34. Exceptions.—Objections to receipt of evidence; and proceedings thereon. p. 35. Further explanations.—Time for stating them.

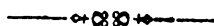
p. 38. Subornation of Perjury.—False Witnesses.—Examination of witnesses. p. 37. Production of the disputed article. p. 38. Further rules for examination of witnesses.—Tendering of oaths. p. 39. Test of evidence.—Punishment for refusing to give evidence. p. 40. Further test.—Limit to receipt of evidence.—Perjury when lawful. p. 41.



CHAPTER III.

ON ORDEAL,—[*Divyūm*.]

Nine sorts of it. p. 42 Ordeal by Oath.—In what cases permitted.—The result how determined. p. 34.



CHAPTER IV.

ON INHERITANCE,—[*Dayu Vibhagu*].

SECTION I.

OF PROPERTY OR OWNERSHIP,—[*Svutvum*].

Generation of Property.—Text of Goutūmu explained.—Argument, that ownership is generated by birth, not by partition. p. 45. Text of DEVULU, and of SHUNKHU, explained. p. 46. Anonymous Text, touching the power of the father and grandfather, explained.—Ownership is pre-existing, and merely defined by partition. p. 47. Resumption of the argument, of Goutūmu's Text, as relates to *Brahmins*, and to *Kshutriyus*.—The king has no right to the soil, but merely to the revenue arising from it. p. 48. To *Vaishyus* and *Shoodrus*.—Conclusion drawn.—Opponent's argument, refuted. p. 49. Argument drawn from affiliation of an adopted son.—Power of Adoption not restricted to *Brahmins*.—A verbal objection, over ruled. p. 50. Consistency preserved. p. 51.

SECTION II.**OF HERITAGE, [*Dayu*]**

Definition of the Term. p. 51. It is of two kinds, Obstructed and unobstructed. p. 52.

SECTION III.**OF THE PARTITION OF HERITAGE [*Dayu Vibhagu*].**

Definition of the Term.—It may take place without the existence of property. p. 52.

SECTION IV.**THE PERIODS OF PARTITION, [*Vibhagu Kalu*].**

Partition of the paternal estate, may take place at three periods, viz. after the father's death.—Or before it, if the mother be past child bearing.—Or, with the father's consent, at any time. p. 53. Partition of ancestral property, may take place even against the father's consent.—With exception of such as he had recovered by his own exertions.—Over which, as well as over his own acquisitions, the father has full dominion.—Circumstances invalidating the father's power. p. 54. The eldest son, in that case, manages the estate and the distribution of it; or the next after him, with his consent.—On voluntary partition by the father, shares defined.—Partition by deduction as defined by Munoo. p. 55. Primogeniture in case of twins.—Partition by deduction, illegal in modern times. p. 56. The father, in partition with an only son, takes a double share.—The only son has even a right to half the ancestral property.—And no other division of ancestral property is legal.—Two texts apparently to the contrary, explained away. p. 57 In equal

partition between father and sons, the mother gets a share, including her private property. Resignation of a share permitted. Partition after the father's death. An equal share for the mother, p. 58. the step mothers, and paternal grandmothers. Partition among sons of different brothers. Brother's sons share with their uncles. p. 59. Partition, when according to the mothers. p. 60. And when not. Partition among sons of different class. Land confined to him of equal class. Illegitimate sons do not inherit. p. 61. But must be maintained. Shares of sons born in inverse order. Illegitimate sons of *Shoodrus*, share by the father's choice; or entitled to half a share after his death. Son born after partition, takes the father's share. p. 62. When bound to pay his debts. Reunion with the father, gives a right to share with the son. Share of a posthumous son. Deduction for expenses and income. p. 63. Partition deferred, in case of pregnancy. Initiation of younger brothers and sisters. Defraying a daughter's marriage. Sons principal, and secondary. p. 64.

SECTION V.

ON ADOPTION,—[*Duttuku*]

Qualifications for an adoption. Effect of the want of them. p. 66. A female may not be adopted. Ceremony of adoption. p. 68. What persons are capable of being adopted. p. 69. The daughter's son and sister's son only for *Shoodrus*. p. 70. Ceremony, among *Shoodrus*, to be by means of a *Brahmun*. p. 71. The proper objects for adoption, p. 72. Widows have power to adopt without the husband's order; but not married women. The brother's son is first to be taken. p. 73. Rules with respect to age. Son given, of two kinds, 'simple adopted,' and 'son of two fathers.' p. 74. The obligations and rights of the 'son of two fathers,' for obsequies and succession. p. 76. His duties defined, on default of sons to both. p. 77.

Argument respecting the marriage and affinity of an adopted son.—His *supindu* relationship with both families defined. p. 80. Summary. p. 82.

SECTION VI.

PARTITION OF DEBTS AND OF CONCEALED EFFECTS.

Debts to be considered at a partition, of three kinds;—to be first paid out of the estate, and the residue divided. Payment out of the paternal estate, restricted to particular obligations. p. 84. Partition of effects, concealed and afterwards discovered. p. 85.

SECTION VII.

OF PROPERTY NOT LIABLE TO DIVISION,—[*Uvibhajyum*]

Certain property not subject to partition. p. 85. If gained without assistance from the common stock. Special rule regarding land recovered. Acquisitions through learning. p. 86. Liable to partition, if made with assistance from the common stock. p. 87. The acquirer getting a double share. An exception with regard to acquisitions by learning. Distinctions in wealth acquired without detriment to the paternal estate. p. 88. Gifts from the father &c, impartible, as well as acquisitions by valour. Exception. Gifts of affectionate kindred, and Wealth received with a maiden, defined. p. 89. Partition of it, governed by like rules as acquisitions by learning. Other things exempted from partition. p. 90. Special rule for certain animals. The father's women reserved. p. 91. Rules for appropriating certain things of an impartible nature. p. 92. Division of common property fraudulently concealed or withheld : by any of the coheirs whomsoever. p. 93. A fresh partition of it ordained. Means for ascertaining a disputed partition. p. 94. The performance of religious duties in a family explained. p. 95. Other signs of partition enumerated. p. 97. In default of any marks, ordeal permitted. A fresh partition to be

made, on failure of all attempts to discover the fact. p. 98. Punishment for disputing an amicable division. p. 99.

SECTION VIII.

ON OBSTRUCTED HERITAGE, OR SUCCESSION,—[*Suprutibundhu Dayu.*]

Order of succession to one, dying finally separated, without male issue. p. 99. First *the wife*; if faithful.—A text of BRUHSPUTI, and of KATYAYUNU limiting the widow's power, explained. p. 101. A widow suspected of incontinence, gets only a maintenance. p. 102. But a faithful one gets the estate; if more than one, they divide it. Next, the daughter, or daughters.—Unmarried before married ones. If married, the poorest of them. The daughter's son. The father; and after him, the mother. p. 103. The uterine brother; then his son.—The brothers' sons share with the other brothers. p. 105. The Gentile Relations; of whom, the father's mother is first.—Then the sister. The father's father and the half brother, share between them; p. 106. After them the paternal great grandfather, the father's brother, and the sons of the half brother share alike.—The *Supindas* and *Sumanodukus*.—The cognate kindred. p. 107. The preceptor, pupil, fellow-student; a *Shrotriya*; or any other *Brahmunu*, if the deceased were a *Brahmun*. p. 108. In all other cases, the king.—The heirs of hermits, asceticks, and perpetual students specified.—Whoever takes the estate as heir, is bound to perform the funeral rites of the deceased. p. 109.

SECTION IX.

OF REUNION AFTER PARTITION,—[*Sunsrishtu*].

Reunion after separation. Permitted with any former coparcener. But the shares at a second partition must be equal, though the contributions were unequal. p. 110. In certain gains, the acquirer gets a double share.

The order of succession to one dying after reunion, is an exception to that of obstructed heritage [Sec. 8th,] p. 111. The son, though not reunited, succeeds in preference even to the reunited uncle. p. 113. The whole, and half brother, or any other reunited persons, share equally.—Fixed property, the uterine brother takes; concealed wealth and animals, he shares with those reunited. p. 115. The sons succeed in all cases, Those reunited before others not reunited.—And the son of one reunited succeeds to one reunited, in default of a son.—In other cases, the parents; and first the mother. p. 116. Then the brother, paternal uncle &c. equally.—The brothers not reunited share with reunited uncles, &c. The wife, if alone reunited. Otherwise not, but must be maintained. As must the daughter, who gets also a share if uninitiated. p. 117. Among unreunited persons succeeding to one, reunited with other members of the family, the mother is first, then the father, the eldest wife, the sister, and daughter; after them the nearest *supinda*. p. 118.

SECTION X.

OF A WOMAN'S PECULIAR PROPERTY,—[*Stree dhunu*]

The sources of a woman's property, are six and not less; but may be more. p. 118. Each gift defined. p. 119. Promise of dower is a debt. Nature and amount of a woman's separate property. p. 120. Property fraudulently given, or things lent for use not included.—Women have no absolute property in their earnings; or in any, but the first six kinds. In some kinds they possess absolute property. p. 121. But not in immovable property given by the husband. Husbands and others do not possess absolute power over woman's property. p. 122. Though a husband but none else may take it under certain circumstances. A husband in some cases may be compelled to restore it. A wicked wife

gets no separate property. p. 123. The successors to a woman's property, are her children. Among daughters, the unmarried are first, sharing with sons. p. 124. If none unmarried, the married ones. The daughter's daughter gets something. All property acquired by marriage, the daughter and not the son takes. All the property except two kinds goes to daughters unmarried or unprovided. A distinction when wives of different class exist. p. 125. In default of daughters, their issue succeeds. Distribution among daughters, and among their sons, is according to the mothers. The issue of the daughters succeeds on their default.—Sons take the property, if the debts are equal to it, or more. On failure of daughters and their issue, sons, and their issue. The right of the daughters and their issue confined to the six kinds of property. p. 126. Woman's property is an exception to the general right of sons. On default of offspring, the kinsmen succeed.—Their right depends on the particular form of marriage. p. 127. Heirs of a woman on failure of her husband, and parents. The son in that case inherits presents from kindred, and the others get the perquisite. Gifts to be restored to the bridegroom, when the bride dies before the marriage, deducting charges. p. 229. Presents by the maternal kindred, belong to the brothers of a deceased damsel. p. 130.

SECTION XI. OF EXCLUSION FROM INHERITANCE,—[*Ununshu*].

Persons excluded from inheritance, must be maintained; but may recover their rights. Disinherited persons enumerated. p. 130. Result of degradation. Persons entering another order debarred from shares; and sons of women married in irregular order, p. 131. If of the same class as the father, the son may inherit. Sons by a woman of a higher class do not inherit—A vicious son does not inherit, if other sons exist. Persons excluded from inheritance, must be maintained, as long as they live. p. 132. Except those entering another order, outcasts, and their

sons. The qualified sons of a disinherited man inherit, with certain exceptions. p. 133. Special rules for their wives and daughters. p. 134.

CHAPTER V. NON PAYMENT OF DEBTS,—[*Runadunum*].

SECTION I. OF LOANS IN GENERAL.

Loans. Interest on them. The rates of it. p. 135. When due without stipulation. p. 136. Stipulation of it when necessary. Accumulation by interest specified. p. 137. Explanation. p. 138.

SECTION II. OF PLRDGES,—[*Adhi*.]

Pledges. Rules for their custody. p. 139. Damage by the pawnee. When to be renewed or made good by the pawner. p. 140. Rules in cases of re-bailment. Lapse of the term. p. 141. Redemption of mortgage. p. 142.

SECTION III. OF SURETIES,—[*Prutibhoo*.]

Sureties. When liable themselves, and their sons, p. 143. but not grandsons. Exceptions. Law of "jointly and severally." p. 144. Surety's remuneration by the principal. p. 145.

SECTION IV. RECOVERY OF DEBTS.

Means of recovery enumerated. p. 145. Rules for enforcing them. Security to be taken. p. 146. Compound interest allowed. Mode of exacting payment of acknowledged debts. p. 147. Debtor's appeal to Justice. Costs of suit. p. 148. Priority among many claims. Receipts and acquittances. p. 149. Moral effect of fraud. Sons and grandsons liable. Only when twenty years old. p. 150. Sons of debtors how to act. Debts not recoverable from sons. p. 151. Order of those liable for a man's debts. Responsibility defined in each case. p. 152. Heirs of a creditor can recover. Continuation of the subject. p. 153. Debts binding on the head of the family, when contracted for its use by others. p. 154. Heirs of creditors how to recover. Appropriation of the debt, in default of them. Reservation. p. 155.

CHAPTER VI. OF DEPOSITS,—[*Nikshepu.*]

Deposits. Of two kinds, undefined, and specified. p. 155. Preservation and restoration of them. Rules in case of damage, or loss, or use of them. Interest on them. And punishment for fraud. p. 156. Exemption for the act of God or the king. Redelivery to the heirs of the bailer. The above rules applied to all species of bailments. p. 157. Compensation in certain cases of loss by the act of God. Rate of valuation for clothes. Punishment for unauthorized use of them. Rate of valuation for metals. p. 158. And for valuation of manufactures. Rules regarding contracts for work. Exceptions. Punishment of a fraudulent borrower.. p. 159.

CHAPTER VII. SALE WITHOUT OWNERSHIP,—[*Uswami vikraya.*]

Sale without ownership. Unauthorized sale, gift, or pledge, void at law. Circumstances invalidating a purchase. Proof, by the owners of lost property. Production of the seller indemnifies the purchaser. p. 160. Time for the purpose to be allowed, and proceedings in default. The first owner recovers in all cases, under certain rules. Rules in respect to publicity of sales, and sellers' places of residence. p. 161. Women, cattle, and land noticed. Term for restoration of escheated property, with the share to be reserved by the king. Exception in the owner's favor. p. 162. Remuneration of the finder of strays. Law in regard to treasure trove. Restoration of stolen property to the owner. p. 163.

CHAPTER VIII.

CONCERNS AMONG PARTNERS,—[*Sumbhooyu sumoot,thanum.*]

Concerns among partners. Mutual obligations. Provision for reward, and punishment, of partners. Order of shares in a partnership. p. 164. Losses to be borne in common. p. 165.

CHAPTER IX. SUBTRACTION OF GIFT,—[*Duttapradanikam*,]

Subtraction of gift. Unalienable property. p. 165. Gifts of unalienable property are void. Alienable property. Gift and sale in what cases prohibited. p. 166. Gifts valid. Gifts void. Terms of the text defined. p. 167. Such gifts may be resumed. Recovery prohibited, of a bribe once given. Bribes defined. Fraudulent acts to be annulled. p. 168. Legal promises binding, even on heirs. p. 169.

CHAPTER X. OF SERVICE,—[*Ubhyoopetya shooshroosha*.]

Service. Servants of three degrees. Slavery of all classes admitted, with exception of *Brahmans*. p. 169. What kinds of labor allowed, and what prohibited. Illegal enslavement; the punishment awarded for it. p. 170. Slaves enumerated. Who of them are not capable of emancipation. Exception. Slavery voidable, on what conditions. p. 171. Slavery in what cases void, ab initio. Reason for emancipating females. Rite of emancipation. p. 172. How any free woman may become a slave. p. 173.

CHAPTER XI. NON PAYMENT OF WAGES,—[*Vetunadanum*.]

Non payment of wages. Rates of wages, when not stipulated. According to the work. p. 173. Rules affecting the servant in regard to work. Rules affecting the master. Damage or loss by servants, how to be estimated, and when made good. p. 174. Cases of dispute about wages and discharge. Liability of the master. Rules relating to hire of carriages, and beasts of burden. p. 175. Rules for Landlord and Tenant. p. 176.

CHAPTER XII. BREACH OF COMPACT,—[*Samvidu vyutikramu*.]

Breach of Compact. Royal establishments. p. 176. Associations enumerated and defined. Punishment for members. p. 177.

CHAPTER XIII.

SECTION I. RESCISSION OF PURCHASE,—[*Kreetanooshuyu*].

Rescission of purchase. Term allowed for trial of articles. Excepted cases.
p. 178.

SECTION II. RESCISSION OF SALE,—[*Vikreeyasumpradanum*].

Rescission of sale. Rules affecting the vender, and the vendee. p. 179.
Sales void. Rules for decision. Punishment of fraud. p. 180.

CHAPTER XIV.

DISPUTES BETWEEN MASTER AND HERDSMEN,—[*Swamipalu Vivadu*].

Disputes between master and herdsmen. Punishment for faults. p. 180.
Mode of certifying deaths in the herd. Pasture lands of townships.
Loss by trespass to be made good by the owner, with a fine for the
offence. p. 181. Exceptions, with the reasons for them. p. 182.

CHAPTER XV. BOUNDARY DISPUTES,—[*Seema Vivadu*].

Boundary disputes. Mode of defining boundaries. Requisite witnesses. p.
182. One witness inadmissible, except under certain circumstances and
limitations. Divination to be attended to. Punishment of false evi-
dence. Proceedings in default of evidence p. 183. Possession, held
to be a title to certain conveniences. Prohibition against erection of
nuisances. p. 184. Definition of 'thoroughfare,' and 'highway.' Fine
for committing nuisances in them. Fine for transgressing boundaries,
&c. and for seizure by intimidation. p. 185. Rights in the produce of
boundaries defined. Erection of bridges allowed on the ground of
another. Repair of them gives no title. Punishment for neglecting
to cultivate land held under lease. p. 186.

CHAPTER XVI. **SECTION I.** ABUSE,—[*Vakparooshyum*].

Abuse, defined to be of three degrees. Punishment of it in various cases.

The aggressor to receive most. Difference of punishment varies as the class of the parties. p. 187. Punishment for abuse of venerable persons. Threats of actual injury. p. 188. Indecent abuse, &c. Mitigation in cases of confession. p. 189.

SECTION II. ASSAULT,—[*Dundu parooshyum*].

Assault, defined. Self defence permitted. Degrees of assault defined. p. 189. Offences enumerated, with the fines for them. p. 190. Double fine for many assaulting one. Damages awarded in proportion to the injury. Cruelty to animals punishable. As well as damage to trees. p. 191.

CHAPTER XVII. ROBBERY,—[*Steyum*].

Robbery defined ; of three degrees. Notorious rogues enumerated. p. 192. The above terms explained by other texts. p. 193. Secret thieves. Punishments enacted for them. Responsibility of the country, in certain cases. p. 194. Punishment for kidnapping, and for stealing cattle, &c. And for robbery of valuables and grain. p. 195. Certain limitations to capital punishment. Aiders and abettors. p. 196.

CHAPTER XVIII. HEINOUS OFFENCES,—[*Sakusum*].

Violent acts. p. 196. defined and enumerated. Capital punishment for certain offenders. Punishment in case of mobs. Aiders and abettors. p. 197. Exceptions in favor of *Brahmins*, in respect to capital punishment. Felons enumerated. p. 198. Examination of the 'inviolability of *Brahmins*.' p. 199. Subject continued. Estimation of articles subject to robbery. p. 200. Instigators, and their punishment. Rape. p. 201. Restraints on a ravished woman. Punishment of the three distinctions of heinous offences ; to be inflicted by the prince alone. p. 202.

CHAPTER XIX. COMMERCE WITH WOMEN,—[*Streesungruhunum*].

Commerce with women. Punishment of fraud in such cases. Punishment

of adultery, considered with regard to class. Criminal conversation, p. 203. And adultery in general. Punishment of women in all cases, is half of that laid down for males. Fornication, considered with reference to class. p. 204. Incest, defined. Exception in regard to punishment of *Brahmins*. p. 206. Fornication, in what cases permitted and when punishable. Seduction of a man by a woman punishable. p. 207. Proof of adultery defined. Punishment of slander; and of unnatural crimes. p. 208.

CHAPTER XX. DUTIES OF MAN AND WIFE,—[*Stree poon dhurmw*]

Duties of the husband:—and of the wife. p. 209.

CHAPTER XXI. GAMBLING,—[*Dyootu Sumahvuyum*]

Gambling, when permitted. p. 209. Punishment of fraud. Gambling, of two kinds. p. 210.

CHAPTER XXII. SUNDRIES,—[*Prukeernukum*].

Sundries. p. 210. Standard for valuation of fines, p. 212. and for application of criminal punishment, General observations on punishment. p. 213. Conclusion. p. 214.

PREFACE.

THE translator of the following work, fully conscious of its imperfections, hopes that a candid statement of the motives and circumstances under which he commenced, and concluded it, may avert criticism, and save him from the imputation of presumption at least, in trying his strength at a task to which he is unequal.

Placed unexpectedly in a situation requiring some knowledge of Hindoo Law, for the examination of the *Vyuvusthas*, or expositions of civil law recorded in the courts under this Presidency, and at the same time totally ignorant of the subject, as well of the language of that law, he naturally sought for information respecting the authorities, by which the Shastrees were guided in their answers to the courts.

Very little enquiry sufficed to shew, that the *Mitakshura* and *Vyuvuharu Muyookhu* were on all occasions quoted by them. The first was found to exist in print, and a manuscript copy of the latter was procured, very incorrect, as was afterwards discovered, but which sufficiently answered the purpose of reference at the time.

Having had at various periods occasion to translate, with a Shastree's assistance, a few detached passages as tests of the *Vyuvusthas*, the Sanskrit manuscript was bound with blank leaves, and these passages entered in their proper places. The facility of reference to Munoo's Institutes, by its arrangement into chapters and verses, then led him to enter also the translations of its texts, wherever they occurred throughout, and becoming now tolerably familiar with the names of authors, he, after a tedious and somewhat laborious collocation of the subjects of Mr. Colebrooke's Digest with the corresponding chapters in the *Muyookhu*, was enabled to collect translations of almost all the texts in the fifth, and

several succeeding chapters. Filling in, by translations of his own, the comments of the author, and the remaining texts not found in the Digest, he thus completed those chapters, and considered this sufficient encouragement to continue the translation to the end. The two first chapters were next attempted, and all that could be found to apply in Sir F. Macnaghten's Treatise, published about the time, being substituted for the Translator's own version, the work might be said to be finished, with the exception of the chapter on Inheritance; since that on Ordeals, being of little or no use, it was determined not to attempt.

Had the difficulties of the Chapter on Inheritance been known at the time the translation was begun, it would certainly have put a stop to it altogether, but fortunately (it may perhaps be allowed to say, if the utility of the work be admitted), the facilities met with in the first instance had led the Translator so far, that he felt bound not to leave it undone, when so much had been got through. He enjoyed likewise advantages, which few, however inclined to be useful, would ever meet with; the four Shastrees, of the Sudur Udalut and Surat Udalut, were at his side, with one attached to himself, and he had in the mean time gained some experience in the Law, and a little knowledge of the Sanskrit language.

Drawing therefore as much as possible from the invaluable translations by Mr. Colebrooke, both of the Digest and of the works on Inheritance, and from that of the *Duttuku Mimansa*, he worked in the chapter on Inheritance, and put the finishing hand to the translation, for which indulgence is thus solicited.

The liberality of the Bombay Government has led them to extend their patronage and support to the book; at the same time it must be fairly stated, that such patronage does not involve responsibility for correctness, as the translation was submitted, in consequence of the season, in an unfinished state, and was honored with such notice, probably from a desire to hold out encouragement to others, to undertake useful works even if im-

perfectly executed, and from the personal kindness of the Head of the Government, rather than as a pledge that they were fully satisfied of its worth.

The faults of execution therefore, many as they are, rest with the Translator; he unfortunately could obtain no European aid, but would cheerfully bear the charge of rashness and incompetence, if the merit be conceded to him, of some industry, and a sincere desire to make himself useful; he seeks no further praise; censure he trusts to have disarmed.

A short account of the nature of Hindoo Law Books, and of those works which have as yet appeared in English, may assist in appreciating the real value of this now submitted.

The *Mitakshura* gives a list of twenty Sacred Authors, said to have written in ancient times upon Law (among other subjects), and whose works are entitled to equal and high veneration by the moderns. Their names are: *Munoo, Utri, Vishnoo, Hareetu, Yanyuvulkyu, Ooshuna, Ungira, Yumu, Apustumbu, Sumvurttu, Katyayunu, Bruhusputi, Purashuru, Vyasu, Shunkhu, Likhitu, Dukshu, Goutumu, Satatupu, and Vusishthu*.¹ Their institutes are technically termed *Smriti*, of which only a small number now exist complete, and of many only a few texts remain.

Besides these, there were institutes of the following Legislators, (considered by some perhaps of inferior authority, and therefore often termed *Oopusmṛiti*;) but now equally imperfect with those of their supposed predecessors. The names, and number, of both classes indeed, are very uncertain², the same Author being sometimes ranked with the first, and sometimes with the second class, by different modern commentators. They are: *Paithinusi, Rishyusringu, Bouddhayunu, Poolustyu, Mureechi, Gargyu, Kusyupu, Narudu, Jabali, Lougakshi, Koothoomi, Dhoumyu, Ashwulayunu, Duttu, Pruchetus, Bhrugoo, Vishwamitrū, Devulu, Soomuntoo, Vyaghru,*

1—Pref. ²Stange's Elem. page xii.

2—Pref. to Digest, page xiii.

Satyuvratu, Atreyu, Vatsa, Somu, Karshnajini, Nachiketu, Markundeyu, and perhaps others.

Modern legislators seem to have composed their treatises by selecting, each, such texts from these ancient institutes as best suited their own notions, working them up with a gloss of their own, “ explaining their “ sense, and endeavoring to reconcile seeming contradictions, to fulfil this “ precept of their great lawgiver (Munoo chap. 2d, v. 14): “ Where “ there are two sacred texts, seemingly inconsistent, both are held to be “ law, for both are pronounced by the wise to be valid and reconcileable.”¹

The numerous and conflicting volumes which such a system has produced, will be at once seen ² From them, several Schools have arisen; the *Gouriyu* (or Bengal), the *Maithilu*, (or north Buhar), and the *Penares*, with the *Muharashtru*, and the *Dravidu*, or southern school. In all but the first, the *Mitakshura*, one of the very earliest of these compilations, is received with respect, as the chief general authority, though in each, some more modern local work is allowed to compete with it, on a few points. The most remarkable of these are, the *Muyookhu* for the *Muharashtru* and the west; the *Smriti Chundrika* for the South, of India; the *Retnakuru* and *Chintamani*, for *Mithila*. Bengal proper alone, denies authority to the *Mitakshura*, having established for itself a totally different school, of which the *Dayu Bhagu* of JIMOOTU VAHUNU is the head. ³ The references in the Margin preclude the necessity of noticing the other treatises of these schools.

The first work in the English language on the subject, was the Code drawn up during Mr. Hastings’s administration. The original, in Sanskrit, “ consists, like the Roman Digest, of authentic texts, with the “ names of their several authors regularly prefixed to them, and explain-

1—Pref. Digest xi.

2—Pref. to the Digest, to the Inheritance, and to Strange’s Elements.

3—Pref. to Inh: iv.

“ed, where an explanation is requisite, in short notes taken from commentaries of high authority : it is, as far as it goes, a very excellent work :”—
 “But, whatever be the merit of the original, the translation of it has no authority, and is of no other use than to suggest inquiries on the many dark passages which we find in it : properly speaking indeed, we cannot call it a translation ; for though Mr. Halhed performed his part with fidelity, yet the Persian interpreter had supplied him only with a loose injudicious epitome of the original Sanscrit, in which abstract many essential passages are omitted, though several notes of little consequence are interpolated, from a vain idea of elucidating or improving the text.”¹

Upon these observations being made known to the Supreme Government, the Digest of JUGUNNATHU was, under their authority, compiled, “from various digests, and from commentaries on the institutes of Law.” But : “In restricting the compilation to the law of contracts and successions, he [JUGUNNATHU] has omitted *the law of evidence, the rules of pleading, the rights of landlord and tenant, the decision of questions respecting boundaries, with some other topics, which should be likewise treated, for the purpose of assisting courts of civil judicature in deciding private contests according to the laws which the Hindoo subjects of Great Britain hold sacred.*”²

The great value of the Digest to English readers will be found probably, in its collection of texts, which includes, under each of its heads, all the above sacred authors. Scarcely one of those applicable to Inheritance from MONOO has been omitted by JUGUNNATHU, and a classification, made for private use by the Translator, of all the texts of each author contained in the present translations on Inheritance, shews that the Digest contains a great many of every author not to be met with in the others. When freed from the perplexing commentary, it forms an excellent key to those Sanscrit

1—Sir W. Jones quoted in Preface, Digest IX-X.

2—Preface to Digest page XI, and to Inheritance, page II ; likewise Strange's Elements, 2nd, 150.

works, of a similar nature, called *Smriti Sangruhu*, as the English version of any text may be found in a few minutes.

Sir William Jones's translation of the Institutes of Munoo, coming in order of time between the above Code and Digest, is too famous to need notice. The opinion of it expressed in Sir T. Strange's work would, it is believed, hold good here, "that it is of authority as a text book, but no " further."

To make up for the deficiencies in the Code and the Digest, Mr. Colebrooke " long ago undertook a new compilation of the law of successions " with other collections of Hindoo Law, under the sanction of the Govern- " ment of Bengal, for preparing for publication a supplementary Digest of " such parts of the law as he considered to be most useful ;" and in the mean time gave to the world a translation of the two treatises on Inheritance, containing the doctrines of the two great schools, of Bengal and Benares, elucidated by notes from their respective adherents. ¹

The first of these, the *Dayu Bhagu*, is restricted in its operation to Bengal proper, as is the *Dayu krumu sangruhu*, a work of the same school, subsequently translated into English by Mr. Wynch, of which no copy has yet reached these parts.

The other, the *Mitakshura*, is equally authoritative with us on this side of India, as elsewhere, but, as previously observed, the doctrines of it are sometimes opposed by the *Muyookhu*, which is allowed to compete with it.

Two treatises on Adoption were in the same manner translated by Mr. Colebrooke Sutherland. As neither of them exist in the original in this part of the country, the Shastrees have no knowledge of them, and take the *Muyookhu* for their authority on that head. But great praise has been passed on the English version, by a high authority. ²

1—Preface to Inheritance page III.

2—Preface to Strange's Elements, XXIV.

The work of Sir F. Macnaghten, being avowedly controversial and founded on Bengal law, is of no utility as a guide here. Every one must regret, that the two first chapters of the *Mitakshura*, those on judicial proceedings and evidence, were not given entire. Valuable as any extracts from such a work are, the insertion of the translation complete, would we may venture to say have doubled the value of this book to practical readers.

Of the last work published, the *Elements of Hindoo Law*, by Sir T. Strange, it is scarcely necessary to make mention, as it is in every one's hands ; but if it be not too presumptuous, we may remark, that the learned author has cheerfully followed the steps, and entirely adopted the doctrine and advice, of the greatest of all European authorities on the subject of Hindoo law and literature, which is of itself sufficient to stamp a high value on the book.

Of NEELKUNTHU, the author of the *Muyookhu*, scarcely any thing is known here beyond his name, though his work is by repute acknowledged at Bunares, Bengal, and also in Tanjore.¹ Even at Poona, where one of his descendants, Huru Bhuttu Kasseekur, of great repute for learning, resided till very lately, no certain information is to be gained. The family is Deshust Muharashtru, long settled at Bunares, where Shunkuru Bhuttu, the father, [author of several very celebrated works on the Mimansa, particularly the *Dvaitu Nirnuyu*, which his son mentions] lived, and where our author was born, as he tells us in his preface, but at what date is uncertain. Huru Bhuttu above alluded to, says it was upwards of 200 years ago, whilst the general opinion is, that his writings, were first circulated about 125 years ago. The manner in which, at the conclusion of the book, he speaks of himself and the dynasty under which he lived, might afford a clue, were not the authenticity of the passage doubted by some, and its meaning unknown to all. It is said that

1—Strange's *Elements* 2nd, 164 note.

at Bhureh, a town situated at the confluence of the Chumbul and Junna, a Raja bearing the title of *Sunguru* or *Yooddhu sooru*, the ruler of a *Mundul*, in that part of the country, held his court: that *Bhugvunt Devu*, one of his successors, took our author under his protection, and that he, out of gratitude, gave the name of his patron to the Book thus compiled under his auspices; and that sixteen generations have elapsed since the parties flourished.¹

Mr. Colebrooke declares him to be "an authority, concurrently with " the Mitakshura, among the Muhrattas"²: and, in an account of the different schools of law furnished by him to Sir T. Strange,³ Mr. Colebrooke observed: "In the west of India, and particularly among the Mahrattas, " the greatest authority after the Mitakshura, is NEELKUNTHU, author of the " *Vyuvuharu Muyookhu*, and of other treatises bearing the same title."

These, twelve in number, were collectively styled by their author, *Bhugvutu Bhaskuru*, and in detail are generally classed as follows: 1st *Sunskaru Muyookhu*, expounding the various rites and ceremonies of a Hindoo's life. 2nd *Acharu Muyookhu*, treating of rules for conduct, in morals and religion. 3rd *Sumuyü Muyookhu*, of dates and astronomical calculations for regulating the chief actions of life. 4th *Shraddhu Muyookhu*, of funeral ceremonies. 5th *Neelee Muyookhu*, of the power, conduct, and duties of kings. 6th *VYUVUHARU MUYOOKHU*, of law and justice. 7th *Danu Muyookhu*, of religious gifts. 8th *Ootsurgu Muyookhu*, of public edifices. 9th *Prutishtha Muyookhu*, of the consecration of the same. 10th *Prayus-chittu Muyookhu*, of penance and expiation. 11th *Shooddhi Muyookhu*, of purification. 12th *Shantee Muyookhu*, of planetary influence and worship.

1—For this account I am indebted to a kind and valued friend, Captain H. D. Robertson, Collector of Poona, who has also most materially assisted me by procuring translations and explanations of doubtful and disputed passages from the Poona Pundits.

2—Preface to Inheritance page iv.

3—Strange's Elements 1st, 316.

The present one, the *VYUVUHARU MUYOOKHU*, is strictly speaking the only one touching upon law. Its doctrines are quoted and alluded to with approbation by Mr. Colebrooke in more than one place in his translations, and by Mr. Sutherland in the *Duttuku Mimansa* and *Chundrika*; and appears, particularly in the concluding chapters, to be rather of the nature of a *Smriti sungruhu*, or general collection of texts, without much commentary, than of those books, elucidating the doctrines of one favourite author [like the *Mitakshura* on *YANYUWULKYU*] by a perpetual gloss, interspersed with a few texts out of the other institutes.

The reference to the authorities, troublesome as many may find them, are not without value, having been given as vouchers for the correctness of the version, as well as to guide those referring to the *Muyookhu* on business, to the particular page of the work where each text is to be found. The example of Mr. Colebrooke warrants this: In the cases of Sir T. Strange's elements, vol 2nd, explained by him, the *Mitakshura* and Digest are quoted indiscriminately in many places. But it is necessary, with regard to chapter fourth on inheritance, to explain, that the reading of the *Mitakshura* has, for reasons stated, always been retained in preference either to *Jimoetu Vahunu*, or the Digest; many of the texts however are only to be found in the two latter, or in the last one, and as NEELKUNTHU's doctrine sometimes accords with one and sometimes with the other, the reference will enable the professional reader to judge which school his author follows, still remembering, that conformity with the *Mitakshura* should be aimed at as far as consistency will allow, with which hope, the author's peculiar opinions, where he differs materially, have mostly been pointed out.

The Shastrees of the courts can at any time discover the distinction, if called upon; for in the Sanskrit edition, prepared [from five manuscripts found in Surat, collated with an old one borrowed from Poona, one from Broach, and a new copy sent from Benares] by the five Government Shas-

trees of this place, and afterwards printed at Bombay by order of Government, care was taken to insert, opposite to every text of *Manoo*, the number of the chapter and verse, and opposite to every text quoted from *YAN-YUWULKYU*, the leaf and page of the Sanskrit large edition of the *Mitakshara* printed in Calcutta, of which the Courts generally have copies. The commencement of each page of the original is likewise denoted, by the Roman numerals in the margin.

REFERENCES.

Cole. Digest.	Mr. Colebrooke's Digest of Hindoo Law, Octavo edition, London reprint, 1801.
—Mit. }	His Translation of the Mitakshara, and of Jimootu Vahunu's Dayu Bhagu
—Jim. Va. }	
—Oblig.	Colebrooke on Obligations and Contracts.
Dut. Mim. }	The Duttuka Mimansu and Duttuku Chundrika, translated by Mr. Colebrooke Sutherland.
Dut. Chuud. }	
Ellis's Lectures.	Extracted from the Asiatic Journal, vol 7th, 645 and 8th, 17-21
Essay on Bailments.	Sir William Jones's Essay on Bailments third edition, Nichols,
Munoo.	The Translation of his Institutes, by Sir William Jones.
Macnaghten.	Sir Francis Macnaghten's work on Hindoo Law.
Reports.	Of decisions by the Bombay Sudur Udalut from the institution of the court in A. D. 1800 up to May, 1824, in two vols.
Strange's Elem.	Sir T. Strange's Elements of Hindoo Law.
Tomlins.	Law Dictionary, third edition, 1820.

EXPLANATION.

Dr. Gilchrist's orthography has been adopted generally, except in the more minute parts of that system, and any deviation from it has been made with a view to simplicity. The names of Authors and Law Books are in capitals, the Italic letters being exclusively used for marking the correspondence between particular terms in the texts and gloss, and for the Sanskrit words occurring in the translation. The words between brackets are interpolations of the present, or former Translators, supplied where the conciseness of the original required explanation.

POWER OF THE VOWELS.

U as in much.	A as in march.
I — mint.	ee — meet.
E — mélange, (Fr.)	oe — moon, mood (long and short)
O — more.	ai — might, sleight.
ou — mouth	

PREFACE

OF

THE AUTHOR.



1. Salutation to GUNESU. Having declared the rules for a king's guidance ¹ and having duly bowed myself before the lotus-footed Sun, I, *Neelkunthu*, proceed to compose something on decisions of law.

2. I meditate upon SHUNKURU, my *Gooroo* [whom I consider as an incarnation of him] who wears the crescent on his forehead, the lord of the bull, and consort of PARVATI, he who gives counsel to all those who visit the holy city.

3. He [who is] the chief of men [SIVU] has assumed a double form, with a view to point out [by the simile below given, that which is correct of] the two conflicting paths [of the divisibility or indivisibility of the spirit of god] ? SHREE SHUNKURU [SIVU] himself is one form; BHUTTU SHUNKURU is the other form here on earth, who has admitted the reasoning, that the spirit of god is indivisible ²

4. False reasoners, deceivers, have on this point in some sort advocated the doctrine of divisibility, but it has been thrown out by me, as unfounded. For this reason, there is no deficiency of discussion on my part; for the worship of god is not the less complete for want of flowers from the sky. [a miracle].

1.—In the last chapter of the Acharu Muryokku; see a similar work, Reports 1st, 460-61, tit. Raj dhurmu

2.—The one side supported by the Madhvan, the other by the Hemadri.

3.—Those holding the contrary, rejecting the doctrine of Mayu, the corner stone of the doctrine of indivisibility.

THE VYUVUHARU MUYOOKHU,

A COMPLETE TREATISE

ON

HINDOO LAW.

BY NEELKUNTHU BHUTTU.

CHAPTER I.

PROCEEDINGS AT LAW [VYUVUHARU MATREKA.]

SECTION I.

1. JUSTICE is the consistent art or practice [by a third person] of discovering the unknown point of "who is in the wrong" between two persons mutually disputing. Or that business, in which a Plaintiff and Defendant exist as the Agents, which is supported with proof, by possession and witnesses, and which admits of a fair discrimination between conflicting pleadings, is called Justice. But according to the MUDUNURUTNU:

Definition
of Justice.

¹ "In an answer of confession, the farther [usual] proceedings in the suit are unnecessary." This is one part of the law; the other is calculated for the exclusion of [unfounded] disputes, false pleadings, and the like.

2. Now these are the divisions of it. YANYUWULKYU; ² "When a person *aggrieved* by another, in a manner contrary to law, or approved usage, represents it to the King, or to the chief Judge, that representation is termed the subject of a judicial proceeding." *Aggrieved*, abused.

II.

3. Eighteen divisions of it are laid down by MUNOO: ³ "Of those titles, the first, is debt on loans for consumption; the second, deposits

Head: of
Law.

¹—Followed by our author on many points, contrary to the Benares doctrines. ²—Macnaghten, page 409.
³—Ch. 8th, vs. 4th, ad. 7th. Colebrooke on Obligations, 18, para. 36. The arrangement of the Muyookhu varies from the above, though the titles, or chapters, will be found the same, in name, and in number, by excluding the three first, or introductory chapters, and the last, on miscellaneous topics, or sundries, which make twenty-two in all.

“ and loans for use; the third, sale without ownership; the fourth, “ concerns among partners; the fifth, *subtraction* of what has been given; “ the sixth, non-payment of wages or hire; the seventh, non-performance “ of agreements; the eighth, *rescission* of sale and purchase; the ninth, “ disputes between master and servant; the tenth, contests on boundaries; “ the eleventh and twelfth, assault, and slander; the thirteenth, larceny; “ the fourteenth, robbery and other violence; the fifteenth, adultery; the “ sixteenth, altercation between man and wife, and their several duties; “ the seventeenth, the law of inheritance; the eighteenth, *gaming*, with dice “ and with living Creatures: these eighteen titles of law are settled as “ the ground work of all judicial procedure in this world.” *Subtraction*, non-performance.—*Rescission*, repentance. *Gaming*, [*Dyootum*] playing with inanimate agents: when with live agents, it is called *sumahvuyuh*.

4. Here, though it is said by BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ “ Killing a human being, “ robbery, touching another man’s wife, and both species of assault, com- “ pose the four kinds of heinous offences,” we may infer, that by reason of the distinctions in the nature of crimes, connexion with women, and assault by word or deed, are here enumerated distinct and different, from the example of a bull and bullock. But I will hereafter clearly point out the distinctions [or characteristics] of these eighteen titles of law, [each in its separate chapter].

III.

Constitu-
tion of a
Court.

5. The Initials of Justice. ² BRUHUSPUTI: “ Let them erect a house in

1—See Post, Ch. 18th., para. 2nd.

2—Ellis’s Lectures, “ Part the 2nd.—Constitution of the Hindoo courts; duties of the prince as chief “ magistrate; duties of the subhasudah or assessors; duties of the pratvivakuh or chief justice (who “ is likened to an archon, prætor, and English judge); several descriptions of courts; institution of “ suits; inadmissible suits; plaint, how to be drawn; answer, how to be drawn; proof, by which party “ to be produced; the four steps, padu, or divisions of a suit, viz. bhashapadu, and ootturupadu, “ pleadings of the two parties; criyapadu, production of evidence, and sadynsiddhipadu, decision by “ the decree; miscellaneous subjects connected with the administration of justice; the nature of proof, “ prumanum, and its kinds, namely: human proof or evidence, munooshyu prumanum, and divine proof, “ by oath and ordeal, divyuprumanum; evidence, of three kinds; namely, likhita, writings; sakshi “ witnesses; bhookti, enjoyment; nature of each briefly stated.” This exactly corresponds with the twofirst chapters of the *Muyookhu*. Initials of justice.—Literally the “ letters, or alphabet,” of law.

“ the midst of a fortified town, having in its vicinity water and trees;
 “ apart from other buildings, and situated in the east quarter, with the door
 “ on that side ; there let them determine on erecting a properly constituted
 “ *assembly house*.”—Or in other words, a *court of justice*, as it has been
 declared by KATYAYONU: “ That place is truly termed a court of jus-
 “ tice, where the king practises justice, discriminating between truth and
 “ falsehood, by a reference to the *Dharmu shastru*.” MUNOO: ¹ “ A King,
 “ desirous of inspecting judicial proceedings, must enter his court of jus-
 “ tice, composed and sedate in his demeanour, together with *Brahmuns*,
 “ and counsellors, who know how to give him advice. Without ostentation
 “ in his dress, and ornaments, let him examine the affairs of litigant par-
 “ ties.” YANYUWULKYU ²: “ *The king*, divested of anger and avarice, and
 “ associated with learned *Brahmuns*, should investigate judicial proceedings,
 “ conformably to the sacred code of laws.”—*The king*, is any one, whoever
 properly affords protection to the people, not merely one of the royal
 tribe or *Kshutri*.

6. KATYAYONU ³ “ A king who investigates, together with his chief judge
 “ [*pradvivaku*], *minister*, *brahmuns*, domestic priest, and assessors of the
 “ court, according to law, shall attain paradise.” Here, the *brahmuns* are
 those [*uniyooktu*] unappointed [to the court]; but the *ministers* are those
 appointed. Even as it has been said: ⁴ “ A person, whether appointed or
 “ not, is entitled to furnish legal advice.”

Officers of
the Court.

7. BAUHUSPUTI gives this definition of the chief judge [*pradvivaku*]:
 “ He who in a cause asks the questions, and in like manner cross-examines,
 “ and who, extracting the [desired] information, speaks first, is termed the
 “ chief judge.” VYASU shews the nature of a *minister*, or councillor [*umatyu*]:

Examiner
or chief
judge.

IV.

¹—Ch. 8th, vs. 1st, and [the last hemistich of] the 2nd.

²—3—4—McNm. page 407.

" Let the king appoint as his minister, a man well informed in the meaning
 " of all the sciences, free from avarice, one who speaks justly, a *Brahmun*
 " [vipru], wise, of a family famed of old for these qualities, being a *twice*
 " born man [dvij]." Here the recapitulation conveyed by *dvij*, or a *twice born*
man [after *vipru*] is made, specially with a view to the choosing a minister,
 either from the royal or commercial tribe, in default of one of the priestly
 class [vipru]; for thus says KATYAYUNU ¹ " If there be no learned *Brahmun*,
 " let the king then associate in the administration, a *Kshutri* or a *Vaishyu*,
 " skilled in the *Dhurmu shastru*; let him carefully keep a *Shoodru* [from
 " such affairs."]

Assessors, 8. And YANYUWULKYU thus declares an assessor [*subhyu*]: ² " Persons
 " who are versed in literature, acquainted with the law, addicted to truth,
 " and impartial towards friend and foe, should be appointed assessors of
 " the court, by the king."—BRUHUSPUTI gives this enumeration of them. ³
 " That assembly, in which seven, five, or three *Brahmun*s, versed in
 " religious and worldly duties preside, is equal to sacrificial ground."

and others. 9. THE SAME author says: " Two persons must be appointed by the
 " king, a secretary and an accountant, who are skilled in expounding *words*,
 " and *meanings*, adepts at counting, free from error, and learned in the
 " different characters [or dialects]" *Words*, the science of etymology. *Mean-*
ings, a dictionary. KATYAYUNU: " Merchants who have just views of justice
 " are to be *there* appointed hearers of causes." *There*, in the assembly.
 BRUHUSPUTI: " A veracious man must be specially appointed, under the
 v. " orders of the assessors, for calling and taking charge, of the witnesses,
 " plaintiffs, and defendants." And he must be none other than a *Shoodru*,
 even as VYASU says: " But an attentive servant must be appointed by the

1—Macnaghten, page 408. There is some difference in the text here: my version is literal.

2—McNtn. page 407.

3—McNtn. page 407.

“ king for collecting the materials for trial, a stout *Shoodru*, whose ancestors have followed the same employment, and he shall be placed under the orders of the assessors.” YANYUWULKYU: ¹ “ But if justice cannot be supervised by the king in person, from press of [other] business, let a *Brahmun* acquainted with all duties be associated with the assessors.”

10. BRUHUSPUTI mentions the duties, of the king, the chief Judge, and the rest: “ The chief Judge is to report the case; the king is to give the necessary orders; the assessors are to investigate the matter [in the first instance]; the accountant is to calculate the money [transactions]; and the secretary is to take down the proceedings of the trial.” THE SAME author says: “ Let the king sit with his face to the east, the assessors looking towards the north, the accountant facing the west, and the secretary turning towards the south.” YANYUWULKYU, speaking of the royal court, says further, respecting judicial functionaries: ² “ *The superintendants* [*adhikrutah*] appointed by the prince, the *separate trades* [*poogah*], the *joint companies* [*Sreni*], as well as *families* [*koolani*], must be accounted to rank according to the order in which they are here named, in all rules of justice among men.” *Superintendants* appointed by the prince, the chief Judge and the rest. *Separate trades* [lit. a multitude] a collection of men getting their living by different trades, inhabitants of the same village, but of different cast. *Joint companies*, are the very opposite of separate trades. *Families*, an union of kinsmen, connexions, and cognate kindred. ³ BRUHUSPUTI also says: “ For those who wander in forests, let an office be established in the forest, that for soldiers in their quarters, and in like

Their
respective
duties.

VI.

1—Macnaghten, page 498.

2—Mentn. p. 433, q. v. The ‘poogu,’ and ‘sreni’ are here translated according to the commentary. ‘Corporation’ and ‘community’ might sufficiently denote them, could we divest ourselves of English associations in using those terms, to which the Hindoo societies do not in all respects conform. Mention of them occurs again at sec. 2nd, para. 2nd, and chapter 2nd, sec. 3rd, para. 6th, and in the 12th chapter, para. 3rd. They are also very clearly enumerated and elucidated in detail, by Mr. Ellis: see Asiatic Journal, v. 8th, p. 17-21, and Strange’s Elem, 1st, 219.

3—Jnyati, denoting, from the context, ‘kindred,’ and not ‘caste.’

“ manner that for the merchants, in their meetings.” *An office*, a court of justice.

Court hours
and days.

11. KATYAYANU notes the time for inspecting judicial cases: “ The king shall give decisions on complaints, in the place appointed for the court, in the first part of the day, in the way laid down in the *Shastru*, putting down those who act inimically ; passing over the first *eighth* portion of the day, the period which includes the next *three eighths*,¹ is declared by sages to be the very best time pointed out by the *Shastru* for judicial business.” Half the first watch [*yamu*] is the *eighth* of the day ; the next three *eighths* are contained between that time and [the sun’s reaching] the zenith. SUMVURTU again declares the days to be set apart as unfit [for business]: “ The man who is wise will not look at judicial business on the days here mentioned, the fourteenth, the new moon, the full moon, and likewise the eighth [of each fortnight].” BRUHASPATI: “ Let the king, sitting *there* in the first part of the day, together with old men, his ministers and his servants, examine causes and hear them read the *pooranus*, and the laws, the religious [*dhurmu*] as well as the *moral laws*.” [*urthu shastru*] *There*, in the court. *Moral laws*, the laws of equity [*neeti shastru*].

Disagree-
ment be-
tween law
and equity,
or two texts
of law.

12. NARUDU, on the disagreement between the religious law, and the moral law, says: “ When a difference may occur between the religious law, and the moral, then let them set aside what is declared in the moral law [*urthu shastru*] and follow that which is enjoined by the religious, law [*Dhurmu shastru*].” But where discrepancy occurs in the *Dhurmu shastru* itself, YANYUWULKYU says:² “ If two texts [*smriti*] differ, reason [*neeti*, or that which reason best supports,] must in practice [*vyavuhar*] prevail.” The faults of those who do not look to the essentials of jus-

1—At midsummer, from about seven o’clock, till about half-past eleven, A. M.

2—Digest, 2nd, 570 note.

tice, are thus declared by BRUHSPUTI: ¹ "A decision must not be made
 "solely by having recourse to the letter of written codes [*Shastru*], since,
 "if no decision were made according to the reason of the law, [or according
 "to immemorial usage, for the word *Yookti* admits both senses] there
 "might be a failure of Justice."

VII.

13. They should fully attend to the customs of the country [*Desh acharu*]
 "and the like; thus BRUHSPUTI says: ² "Let all Rules, of each country,
 "cast, and family, that have been derived and preserved from ancient times,
 "be still observed in the same way, otherwise the subjects will rise in
 "rebellion, discontent will be produced among the people, and the army
 "and the Treasury will suffer injury." The twice born classes, [*dvi*] in the
 "*Dukhun*, take the daughter of a mother's brother in marriage. In the
 "*Mudhyu deshu*, they follow various professions, and are artizans, and
 "eaters of Kine; and in the east [*poorve*] the men eat fish, whilst their women
 "are notorious prostitutes. In the North, their women drink intoxicating
 "liquors, and women in their courses are by the men there considered fit
 "to be touched. These people are not deserving of Penance, or punishment
 "for such acts as these." The *Poorubees* are the same as the *Prachyus*, ³
 but in some copies they read *surve*, *all*, for *poorve*, that is, *all* classes,
Brahmans and the rest. *Punishment* means legal correction. SOME ONE here
 declares: "However, what is laid down by law as the penance &c, for
 "such acts, applies to countries which are not included among the above-
 "mentioned." But OTHERS again say: "Punishment is to be construed of the
 "nature of Penance; thus the people of that country will escape legal
 "punishment only; and in other countries, both legal punishment and
 "penance will issue."

Customs of
the country
&c. to be
upheld.

Examples.

14. VYASU says: "If a decision cannot be obtained from the other

Reference
to profes-
sional men.

1—Cole. Digest. 1st, 137-3.—2nd, 128. Ellis's Lectures in Asiatic Journal, 8th, 22.

2—Reports, vol. 1st, 65-426.

3—Those on the S. E. of the river Suraswadi.

“ [appointed] persons, in disputes among men who live by commerce, any
 “ handicraft, tillage, dying, or such profession, then let the matter be tried
 “ by those skilled in the same trade.” MUNOO ¹: “ Let not a prince, who
 “ seeks the good of his own soul, [hastily and alone] pronounce the law’
 “ on a dispute concerning any legal observance, among twice-born men
 VIII. “ in their several orders.”

The first
 notice of
 suit or in-
 jury.

15. KATYAYUNU: ² “ The king should thus interrogate a person coming
 “ before him [at a proper time, and in a respectful attitude], saying, ‘ Fear
 “ not, O man, but disclose by whom, where, when, and for what cause, your
 “ grievance arises?’ He should then, in conjunction with his *Brahmins*, and
 “ assessors, deliberate upon the representation thus made, and should it
 “ appear reasonable, he shall deliver to the complainant a summons, or
 “ depute an Officer for the purpose of citing the adverse party.”

Arrest, or
 Duress.

16. NARUDU: ³ “ A person being about to prefer a claim, may arrest
 “ his adversary [evading it, or not giving satisfaction in the matter] until
 “ the arrival of the summons.” THE SAME author declares four kinds of
 arrest or *Duress* [*Asedhu*]: ⁴ “ Arrest is four fold; local, temporary, in-
 “ hibition from travelling, and the pursuit of a particular occupation; the
 “ person in confinement by one of these modes, shall not break away
 “ from it.” HE ALSO ⁵ declares there is a punishment for breaking through
 restraint, by one thus confined: “ One who, being arrested at a proper
 “ time, breaks his arrest, is to be fined.” In some cases, says THE SAME
 author, punishment is also to be inflicted on the party putting in *Duress*:
 “ But if a man inflicts *Duress* upon any one in an illegal mode, as
 “ by confining [any of] his ten members [limbs, functions, or senses]; by

1—Ch. 6th. vs. 300.

2—Macnaghten, p. 410.

3—Mentn, p. 411. Strange's Elem. 1st. 307.

4—Mentn, p. 411.

5—Mentn, p. 411. The remaining words there appear to apply to our next text.

“stopping his speech, or breath, or the like, he is worthy of punishment; “not the man who breaks through [such illegal restraint].” NARUDU mentions an exemption from punishment in some cases of resisting *Duress*: “A person placed in *Duress* whilst crossing a river, or passing a forest, “or in a bad [place or] country, or during an affray, or in other “[distress] does not become liable to punishment, if he break through “such severe *Duress*.” KATYAYUNU declares this punishment for confining one exempt from restraint; “But it is thus decreed, that he who “imprisons one not amenable to confinement, shall be punished by the king.” IX.

17. THE SAME author defines those who are exempt from confinement: “Persons standing upon a tree or hill, or situated upon an elephant, “horse, carriage, or vessel; and one standing in a dangerous place, are “all exempt from arrest by those enforcing a demand; as well as one “afflicted with sickness, and one suffering under misfortunes, and one “employed [as a minister of religion] by *Yujmans*.”—“Let not the “King cause to be summoned, persons in a weak state, nor minors, old “men, persons in danger, those actually employed in religious offices “immersed in [worldly] business, those overcome with desire or “habitual estrangements, nor persons employed on the duty of the king or “of the Gods [*Ootsao*].”¹ “Nor those intoxicated, deranged, or idiotic; nor “persons in grief, nor servants. Nor a young woman who is without friends “[*Heenu pukshu*] on either side, nor any woman born of a noble “family, nor one lately delivered of a child, nor a damsel of the highest “tribe. These are termed dependent on their relations.”

Persons exempt from process.

18. “But women upon whom their families are dependent, profligates, “and harlots, and those who are expelled from their families, or degraded, may be summoned.” “Having well examined the charge, the

Those not exempt.

¹—Mentz, p. 410. I have altered the translation.

" King in weighty matters may summon, but in a gentle way, even those
 " who have withdrawn [as hermits] to the woods, and the like of them." ¹
 " Having ascertained the time, place, and comparative importance of
 " the charge, the king may summon even those who are sick, causing
 " them to be brought slowly *in carriages*." In some copies, they
 read, *by a messenger*.

- Contempt. 19. A person who, being called, does not attend, deserves punishment,
 Even as BRUHUSPUTI says: "Where a person possessed of relatives or
 " family, from arrogance neglects to go where he is called, let them
 " deliberate upon his punishment in proportion to the cause at issue."
- X. KATYAYUNU specifies certain grades of fine for corresponding sorts of
 complaints: " In petty causes, the fine shall be fifty, but in the mid-
 " dling, not lower than an hundred [*panus*], and in great causes, never
 " less than five hundred."

- Commence-
 ment of the
 Pleadings. 20. PITAMUNU declares what is to be done on the arrival of the person
 summoned: " Let the person prosecuted be placed standing before the
 " Court *with* the complainant likewise—" The third case [by or *with*]
 is used here in the sense of *in company with*. KATYAYUNU: " Then let
 " the Plaintiff fully tell his case, and the Defendant immediately after-
 " wards; at the end of their pleadings then let the assessors [speak], and
 " the Chief judge after that." BRUHUSPUTI: " If the Plaintiff and De-
 " fendant should come, each saying, ' I was first [in suing], ' let the Plaint
 " be registered with reference to the class of the Parties, or regulated
 " by the injury." ²

- Attorneys
 permitted. 21. " Relations, or any other man duly appointed, may undertake the

1—Mentn, page 411.

2—In the [manuscript] Purisishu, the reading is "Vado vurn unooroopenu"—In the printed one, or Veer-
 mitrodayu, "Vado vurn unoopoorvenu." In all the old copies of the Mnyookhu, "Dundo vurn un-
 oeroopenu." The last they all agreed to reject; of the other two readings, the first has been followed

"Plea, or answer, for persons weak [in mind or body], idiots, madmen, old men, women, minors, and sick people." NARUDU: "He on whose account another is litigating, whether he be appointed [*Niyooktu*] by the Plaintiff or sent by the Defendant, his is the victory or defeat, by whom he is delegated." KATYAYUNU ¹ however says ²: "He is guilty of officiousness, who is neither brother, father, son, nor constituted agent of the party; should he interfere, he is liable to amercement." But this relates to one not duly appointed.

22. In some cases, the absence of a Deputy is enjoined by the very
 SAME AUTHOR: "In [prosecutions for] killing a *Brahmun*, drunkenness,
 "robbery, adultery with a spiritual preceptor's wife, killing a man,
 "theft, [*Steyu*], ³ touching another man's wife, and also eating forbidden
 "things; in charges for abduction, or ruin, of a virgin, assault, and
 "forgery, as well as injury to the king, a *substitute* [*Pritivadi*] is not to be
 "given; the doer of the act shall defend his cause himself." The word *steyu*
 is used a second time, with a view to a more particular prohibition
 of an Attorney. A *substitute*, a deputy [or attorney].

Exceptions

XI.

23. YANYUWULKYU points out the proceedings of the Plaintiff, when the Defendant has been brought up: "Let there be [a record] written in presence of the Defendant, exactly what was made known by the Plaintiff, marked with the year, month, and half month; the day, name, Cast, and other [necessary notes]." In another SMRITI it is said ⁴: "That is termed a charge, or declaration, which is significant, technically precise, comprehensive, unconfused, direct, unequivocal, conformable to the original complaint, probable, uncontradictory, clear, susceptible

Requisites
of a good
Plaint.

1—NARUDU in the Mitakshura.

2—Mentn, p. 411.

3—In the original, the same word [*Steyu*] is used for both.

4—Mentn, p. 412. Strange's Elements, 1st, 309.

“ of proof, concise, not deficient, not adverse [to local and temporal usages], ¹ comprising the *year*, season, month, fortnight, day, hour; “ *country*, situation, place, village; the complaint and its nature; the “ tribe, appearance, and age of the adverse party; the weight and quantity of the property in dispute; the names of the complainant, and his “ adversary; the names of their respective ancestors, and of the ruling “ kings; the grievance done, and the names of the original acquirer, “ and grantor.” The *year* and other [points] here mentioned, are declared to be of use in cases of mortgage and the like. And the necessity of sometimes noting the *country*, &c. is declared in another SMRITI: ²

- XII. “ The country; place, site, tribe, name, neighbourhood, dimensions, nature of the soil, the names of ancestors, and of former kings: These “ ten should be specified in a suit for immovable property.”

Correction
of it.

24. KATYAYONU: “Let the Chief Judge record at length the first side “ of the cause, as told in the [Plaintiff's] own way, on paper, after it “ has been corrected on a writing-board, in white letters.” NARUDU defines the limits of correction: ³ “He may amend his declaration “ until the answer is given in, but being stopped by the answer, the “ corrections must cease.” “But as long as the Defendant shall not “ enter the answer of the Plaint, so long may the Plaintiff cause them “ to write any [further] account of the matter.”

Plaints in-
admissible.

25. The properties of a Plaint being thus laid down, false Plaints at variance with them, are also touched upon, though well known as fictitious. Thus in another SMRITI: “Let them utterly dismiss a false suit, “ *unknown* [to reason], *shewing no trespass, unmeaning, unfounded*, whether “ *incapable of proof, or contrary.*” *Unknown*, as if he said, ‘Flowers from

I—For instance, a man in central India, [Mudhya desh], suing for a plantation of betel-nut trees, [knowing they cannot grow at a distance from the coast], or for mangoes, out of season, &c. Veermit, leaf 20th, p. 1st.

2—Yanyuwulkyu—Mentn, p. 412.

3—Mentn, page 413.

heaven have been stolen from me.' *Shewing no trespass*, as, 'He follows his business by the light of my lamp.' *Unmeaning*, as, 'What d'ye call it [*Kuchututupum*] has been taken from me.' *Unfounded*, as, 'He living opposite to me reads with a loud voice.' *Incapable of proof*, as, 'This person laughed at me with a scowling brow,' or the like. *Contrary*, to common sense, as, 'I was abused by a dumb man.'—Plaints in opposition to the City, district, or other point, are also touched upon: ¹ "That XIII.
 " complaint which is prohibited by the Government, or detrimental to the
 " interests of a City, or a country, or to the different trades-people, ci-
 " tizens, villagers, and merchants, is pronounced to be inadmissible."

26. But that suit which contains different heads of charge, does not Exceptions
 thus partake of the nature of a false complaint; otherwise we should have the misfortune of finding a law contrary to this of KATYAYUNU:
 " The King may also without doubt receive, from desire of seeking out
 " the truth, that cause which contains many counts, and is decidedly
 " admissible among legal proceedings." As for the saying, 'that a Plaint jumbling together different heads of law does not stand,' it must be understood [that the different Counts] may not be taken up at one time, but in their proper order. ²

27. YANYUWULKYU states what is to be done when the Plaint has The answer
 been thus prepared: ³ "The answer of the party who has heard the
 " declaration, must be written down in presence of the Plaintiff."

28. NARUDU explains the qualities of an answer: ⁴ "The wise have Answers enumerated
 " held that to be an answer, which embraces the declaration, which is
 " solid, clear, consistent, and obvious." KATYAYUNU specifies four sorts

1—Mentn, page 413.

2—A passage, apparently a text, agreeable to this is found in Mentn, p. 413.

3—Mentn, p. 413.

4—Mentn. p. 414.

of them: ¹ A *denial*, a *confession*, a *special exception*, and a *plea of former Judgment*, are the four sorts of answer." THE SAME author explains a *denying* answer [*Mithyotturu*]: "When the Defendant makes denial of the claim, that should be considered in law as an answer
 XIV. "of *denial*." THE SAME author declares this again to be of four kinds: "An answer of *denial* is of four kinds; as 'this is false;' 'I know not this matter;' 'I was not then present;' or 'I was not born at that time.'" An answer of *assent* [*Sutyotturu*] is noted in another SMRITI: "A declaration affirmative of the matter in dispute, is termed an assent." NARODU exemplifies a *special exception* [*prutyuvuskundunu*]: ² "When the Defendant acknowledges the [receipt of the] sum as declared by the Plaintiff, but alleges a consideration, it is deemed a special plea." KATYAYUNU thus propounds the *plea of former judgment* [*prannyayu*]: ³ "If a man though cast at law, revive the suit, he should be considered as one previously confuted, and is called an appellant from a former decision."

Inadmissible answers

29. The properties of an answer being thus fixed, [a defective one] is also explained in another SMRITI, though the nature of an answer wanting these properties conveys intrinsic proof against itself: ⁴ "That is not an answer, which is dubious, not to the point, too confined, too extensive, or not embracing all parts of the declaration. That which is relative to other matter, incomplete, obscure, confused, not obvious, is a faulty answer." KATYAYUNU also says: "When an answer admits the truth of the Plaint on one Count, and on another sets up a special exception [*Karunum*] and at the same time denies another Count altogether, it is, from its mixed nature, held to be no answer."

Onus probandi.

30. THE SAME author states the reason for this notice of a void

1—Mentn, p. 114.

2—3—Cole. Digest. 1st, 370.

4—Mentn, p. 114.

swer: ¹ "For in one suit, the proof cannot rest on both parties, nor
 " can both obtain Judgment, nor can two answers be offered at once."
 Here, the meaning is this: ' In giving a flat denial and a special ex-
 ception in one answer, the actions of two different plaintiffs are opposed
 to each other.' It has been thus declared by NARUDU: ² " It has been
 " recorded, that in the case of a total contradiction, the proof rests with
 " the complainant; and in the case of a special exception, with his adversa-
 " ry." Therefore both parties in one cause [exhibiting proof] is contrary
 [to law.] Even so, both actions lie on the Defendant, when there is a
 jumbling of a special plea, with plea of former judgment; for it is said
 by VYASU: "In pleading a former judgment and special exception, the
 " Defendant must exhibit the proof." And again by THE SAME: "In plea
 " of former decision, it must be satisfactorily established, by exhibiting
 " [copy of] the Decree so gained to the Chief Judge, and the rest
 " likewise." Therefore, in pleading a former decision, it must be es-
 tablished, either by exhibition of the Decree, or by those who saw the
 original decree, or the like. But in an answer setting up a special ex-
 ception, the defence [must be supported] also by witnesses, documents,
 and other proof. Here also, [proof on both sides in one cause] is con-
 trary [to law]. The same rules must be observed also in a mixture of
 three or four [pleas in one answer].

31. And in these matters, the properties of a void answer arise from
 conjunction: for if in due order, the properties of a [valid] answer are
 preserved; and this order must depend upon the pleasure of the Plain-
 tiff, Defendant, and the Assessors. And even thus HAREETU says:
 " When a denial and special plea are both contained in one answer

¹—Macnaghten, p. 415. On the subject of the "Onus probandi," see Bentham on Evidence, p. 357. [Ch. 16th.]

²—Macnaghten. p. 415.

“together; also a confession with any other [answer], then which [of them] is to be taken as an answer [to that plaint]:? that which contains the most important matter, or that wherein there is something of use to the action, is to be considered as the proper answer, to prevent confusion: for otherwise.” ‘There will be confusion’ is wanting [to complete the sense].

- xvi. 32. The meaning of it is this: ‘In a claim for *gold* and *clothes*, when it is pleaded, that the *gold* was not received, and that the *clothes* were received and returned; first let them decide about the *gold*, and afterwards, the point relating to the *clothes* may be settled.’ The same course is to be pursued, in a mixture of a denial with plea of former decision, and of the latter with a special plea. Likewise even in those disputes, where it is pleaded, ‘the *gold* was received, but the *clothes* were not;’ or, ‘[the clothes] were given back;’ or [where it is said]: ‘I gained a former action about the *clothes*;’ the case must be tried only with respect to the *clothes*, not with reference to the *gold*. For though it is a matter of more value, yet there is no action, or proof, upon it. But in a dispute where the Plaintiff says: ‘This is my cow which ran away at such a time; I saw it in his house just now:’ and the Defendant answer: ‘This is utterly false; even before the time set forth [in the Plaint], it was standing at my house,’ it comprehends both a denial and special plea; there is no property of a void answer in this, which is an answer of denial, [at the same time] shewing cause or special exception. The action lies here with the Defendant alone; not at all with the Plaintiff. because of this text of HAREETU: ¹ “When an answer involves a denial, and a special plea, the special plea is to be first considered.” Even so, if there be a conjunction of a denial with plea of former judgment, or of a special plea together with plea of former

¹—Macnaghten, page 416.

judgment, in a suit of only one Count, it does not partake of a void answer. In both of these cases, the proof lies with the Defendant only. This is enough to shew, that in no one case can proof on both sides exist by any means.

33. YANYUWULKYU lays down the order for exhibiting the proof, after the answer has been recorded in writing: ¹ "After this, let the Plaintiff immediately get them to write down the proof of the matter complained about: when that is satisfactory, he will gain the cause, but when it is otherwise, it will be reversed." This again relates to an answer of denial, but in the other kinds of answer, the exhibition of proof lies with the Defendant alone. Thus HAREETU: ² "For in an answer pleading a former decree or a special exception, the Defendant shall exhibit the proofs; in an answer of denial, the Plaintiff; but issue cannot be had in an answer of assent."

Exhibition
of proof.

XVII.

34. YANYUWULKYU mentions, that there are four feet, or requisites of a decided suit: "A decision in causes is shewn to have four quarters." And these four quarters are explained in another SMRITI: ³ "It has four divisions; namely the declaratory, replicative, probatory, and adjudicative, and is termed quadruple." But this has reference to an answer distinct from one of assent; because in an answer of assent, there are only two members: even as BRUHUSPUTI says: "In an answer of denial, the cause must be completed in its four members; and likewise in a special plea; but in one confessing the claim, the suit may be considered as complete with two members."

Plea-
dings enu-
merated.

35. YANYUWULKYU: ⁴ "A person complained against, not having

Retort
prohibited.

1—Macnaghten, p. 449, where some little variation is found in the reading.

2—Macnaghten, p. 451.

3—Macnaghten, p. 416-17, where the whole text, of which this is only the latter hemistich, is recorded.

4—Macnaghten, p. 417.

Exception. "cleared himself, shall not retort, nor shall another charge a person
 "already labouring under a charge, nor shall any thing foreign to the
 "original complaint be introduced. But he may make a counter charge
 in cases of affrays, or criminal prosecutions." ¹

xviii. 36. NARUDU: ² "That man, who forsaking his original claim, rests
 Technical errors remediable. "on other grounds, is known for a false claimant, by reason of the
 "confusion of his proceedings." The meaning is, that the false claimant
 becomes [only] liable to punishment; he is not to be cast in his cause
 so laid. And this must be taken with reference to suits for money: Even
 as THE SAME author says: ³ "A verbal error, is not fatal in all [any]
 "civil actions; [for instance, in actions brought,] for seduction, for land-
 "ed property, or for debt, the Plaintiff is to be punished, but it does
 "not annul his claim." The second hemistich is added, for the sake
 of clearing up the first.

Receipt of Evidence. 37. YANYUWULKYU: ⁴ "When witnesses are adduced on both sides,
 "the witnesses of the *first complainant* [are to be examined]; If the *first*
 "side be weak, or wanting in that point, those of the Defendant may
 "be received." The *first complainant*, the Plaintiff in the suit. *The first*
side, the Plaint. If *it be weak*; when there is no proof required [of
 the plaintiff], because of the Defendant's taking it on himself, by an an-
 swer shewing cause. The receipt of oral evidence, is put for the sake
 of denoting proof in other ways also.

Sureties. 38. THE SAME author says: ⁵ "A competent surety must be taken

1—See chapters 16th and 18th.

2—Macnaghten, p. 417, where it is translated 'must be nonsuited'; I have made the text literal, to agree with the comment following.

3—Macnaghten, page 417.

4 Macnaghten, p. 420. 451. q. v. Here the text is made to apply to a general rule, between Plff. and Dft.; in the Mitakshura, [Sir F. M's. authority] it is laid down for a particular case, between two claimants for the same property; and thus the Muyookhu and Mitakshura differ widely.

5—Macnaghten, p. 418. Strange's Elements, 1st, 397.

“from each party for the *decision of the dispute*.” *The decision of the dispute*, the satisfaction of the judgment. KATYAYUNU specifies who are not to be received in the matter of security: “Neither a Master, nor an enemy; nor in like manner the master’s foreman, nor one *confined*, nor in like manner, one sentenced to punishment, nor *one of doubtful character* at any time; neither *an heir*, nor *a poor man*, nor even one *obliged to dwell elsewhere*; nor one appointed on the king’s business; nor an ascetic; nor he who is unable to liquidate the claim of the individual, and a sum equal to it, as a fine to the king; nor one unknown, are to be taken [as sureties] in matters requiring security.” *Confined*, bound in fetters, or the like. *One of doubtful character*, one addicted to particular vices. *An heir*, sons, grandsons, and others entitled to take a man’s Estate. *A poor man*, one indigent. *Obliged to dwell elsewhere*, one turned out of the country. YANYUWULKYU: “But the being security, contracting debts, and giving evidence, between brothers, as well as between man and wife, and likewise a father and son, if they be unseparated, is not recorded.”

Inadmissible.

XIX.

39. In default of security, KATYAYUNU says: “If a party be unable to furnish a competent surety, he is to be guarded; and at the close of each day, is to furnish wages for the payment of his guards.” THE SAME author adds: “A man of the twice born classes, who is deficient in security, shall be guarded by men accompanying him out of doors; but they shall confine in prison, *Shoodrus* and the other [low Casts] who cannot give security.”

Confinement in default of surety.

40. NARUDU ² sets forth the qualities of a false Plaintiff: [*Heenu vadi*] “That man, who, entirely giving up his first ground of action, again takes

False Plaints.

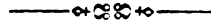
1—Macnaghten, p. 418.

2—Vide ante, para. 36, Macnaghten, 417, q. v.

“ up another plea, is, by reason of his passing away from one cause,
 “ decidedly known to be a false claimant.” YANYUWULKYU shews how
 to distinguish the party who is in the wrong: ¹ “One who is constant-
 “ ly shifting his position, who licks about *his mouth*, whose forehead
 “ sweats, and whose countenance continually changes colour; one whose
 “ mouth dries up, and who falters in his speech, who contradicts him-
 “ self often; one who does not look up, or return an answer; who
 XX. “ contorts his lips; one who undergoes spontaneous changes, whether
 “ mental, verbal, corporeal, or actual; such person, whether making a
 “ claim or giving evidence, is esteemed false.” *His mouth*, the region
 of the lips.

SECTION II.

OF PROOF IN GENERAL. [PRUMANUM]



Nature of
proof.

1. YANYUWULKYU: ² “Evidence is said to consist of documents,
 “ possession, and witnesses. In the absence of all these, a divine test
 “ is prescribed.” KATYAYUNU also: ³ “When one adduces human evi-
 “ dence, and the other appeals to a divine test, the king will, in this
 “ instance proceed to examine the human evidence, and will not have
 “ recourse to the divine test.” “Even when human testimony is applica-
 “ ble to only one part of the case, that is to be received in preference;
 “ and recourse must not be had to persons willing to establish the whole
 “ case by supernatural means.” Proof by ordeal is not declared, when

Proof, by
deeds.

1—Macnaghten. p. 419.

2—Macnaghten, p. 438. Strange's Elem. 1st, 399.

3—Macnaghten: p. 439.

“ living witnesses are present; and when there are deeds or documents
 “ in a cause, neither ordeal nor witnesses shall be [resorted to]. As for
 “ those rules which are set up by Separate trades, [*Poogah*] Joint com-
 “ panies, [*Sreni*] Corporate bodies, [*Gunu*] and the like, the proof of
 “ them must be written deeds; neither ordeal, nor witnesses.” ¹

2. ² “ In nonfulfilment of a gift, as well as in gift, and in cases where
 “ a decision is required between a master and his servant; in nonful-
 “ filment of sale, and refusal to receive goods purchased; in gambling al-
 “ so, whether with inanimate or living objects, when disputes are brought up,
 “ proof by witnesses is declared requisite, not by ordeal nor by documents.”

By Wit-
nesses.

XXI.

3. In disputes respecting the making of door ways and roads, and
 “ that about enjoyment of any thing, water courses, and the like, pos-
 “ session is the strongest proof, not documents, ³ nor witnesses.”

And by
possession.

4. BRUHUSPUTI declares ordeal to be in some cases the strongest: “ Ma-
 “ kers of false Jewels, pearls, or coins; they who steal deposited articles;
 “ murderers, and those who commit adultery with other men’s wives,
 “ are always to be examined by [ordeal of] Oath; in charges of deadly
 “ sin, if witnesses are present, and the Defendant [*Vadi*] accepts the
 “ ordeal, the witnesses then shall not be examined.” VYASU: “ If he say,
 “ ‘ this writing was not made by me; it was forged by this man;’ hav-
 “ ing laid down that writing, a decision on the case shall be made by
 “ ordeal.” ⁴ “ In the case of a capital offence committed in a desert,
 “ in an uninhabited place, at night, or in the interior of a dwelling;
 “ and in the case of a denial of a deposit, divine test must be resorted
 “ to.” BRUHUSPUTI: “ When doubts are produced in written or oral evi-
 “ dence; and where the circumstantial evidence is incomplete, ordeal is

Ordeal,
when lawful

1—See ante, section 1st, para. 10th; and post, chapter 2nd, sec. 3rd, para. 6th, : chap. 12th. para. 3rd.

2—See subsequent Chapters on these heads.

3—Ordeal, Mitakshura.

4—Narudu, in the Mitakshura. Macnaghten, p. 439.

"then to be made the means of clearing up the matter."

Matters of
choice.

5 THE SAME author states a liberty of choice in some cases, between ordeal and witnesses: ¹ "In the investigation of a capital offence, or *affray by deed or words*, and in all cases of violence committed long ago, both witnesses, and divine test may be had recourse to." "Writings for debt or witnesses; as well as the *entry of any trifling circumstance*, or the like, and ordeal, are mentioned as admissible, with a view to the well being of the subjects." *Entry of any trifling circumstance*, one point of proof. *In an affray, by words*, meaning personal abuse, as 'you have murdered a *Brahmun*,' or the like.

Explanation
XXII.

6. But what KATYAYUNU says that: "In wordy affrays, and in disputes for *land*, they shall not take notice of Ordeal," relates to trifling cases of abuse; the word *land* is merely used to signify fixed property [in general], by putting a part for the whole. Even as PITAMUHU says: "In disputes for fixed property, they must cause ordeal to be excluded;" therefore, if there be witnesses or other legal proof then ordeal is prohibited. Even so THE SAME author says: "They shall cause the matter to be proved by these [three means], by witnesses, by documentary evidence, and by possession."

Total absence
of evidence.

7. PITAMUHU: "Where Deeds are not to be procured, nor proof by possession, nor witnesses; and there is no manifestation, [or descent, of the judgment] of the Gods, then the proof lies in the opinion of the king." Disputes, which maintain such a doubtful form, that they are not capable of being determined with certainty, the King shall decide, by his own opinion of them, for he is the lord of all. Thus the *Vyuvuharu Matreka* is finished.

1—Macnaghten, p. 439. q. v. 'Assault and battery' does not exactly define the Hindoo law term, which includes 'abuse, &c.' under this head. See chapter 16th, sections 1st and 2nd,

CHAPTER II.

OF THE DIFFERENT MODES OF PROOF.

SECTION I.

OF EVIDENCE BY WRITINGS [LEKHYUM].



1. On this subject BRUHUSPUTI says: "Writings are declared to be of three kinds; those written by the king, *made at a particular place*, " and likewise written *by any person with his own hand*; but their further subdivisions are very numerous." As for only two kinds being mentioned by VUSISHTHU: "Writings are understood to be of two natures, " those executed *among the people*, and those relating to the king's " affairs," it is occasioned by his considering as one, without distinguishing them, those *made at a particular place*, and those *under a person's own hand*. *Among the people*, is a parallel expression to that of, 'among mankind' [in general]. According to the Author of the SUNGRUHU, ¹ written evidence is declared to be of two kinds, those deeds made by the king, ² and those current *among mankind*.

Evidence
by writings
XXIII.

2. BRUHUSPUTI: "Writings *among mankind*, are of seven kinds; for " *partition, gift, purchase, pledge, public agreements, slaves, debts, and the* " *like*; the king's orders are of three kinds." ³ "That record of *partition* which brothers, [or other coheirs,] execute, after making a just division " by mutual consent, is called the written memorial of the distribution." " And when a man has given away land, the deed which he gets drawn

Enumera-
tion of them

Viz.
Deeds, of
Partition.

Gift

1—The Smṛiti Sungruhu.

2—See post, para. 6, 8.

3—Colebrooke's Digest, 3rd, 408.

" out, ' for holding the land as long as the moon and sun shall last, un-
 " reserved, and incapable of being seized by any one,' that is known
 " as a writing of *gift*." "When any one, having bought a house, field,
 Purchase " or the like, causes a deed to be drawn up, containing an exact state-
 " ment of the price, that is called a writing of *purchase*." " When a man,
 Pledge " having given in pledge either moveable or fixed property, causes a
 " writing to be made out, stating in it the conditions, whether of pre-
 " servation or enjoyment [by the mortgagee], it is called a writing of
 " *pledge*." "If the people of a whole Village, or of a district, mutually
 Agreement " execute a writing, under their own signatures, among themselves, for
 " the sake of some ordinance not contrary to the king's [laws], that
 XXIV. " is called a writing of *agreement*." "When a person, destitute of clothes
 Slavery " and food, makes a writing in a forest to this effect, ' I will do your
 and " work,' that is called a writing of *slavery*." "When a person, taking up
 Debt. " money at interest, makes out a deed himself, and causes the same to
 " be done by the other party, it is termed a writing of *loan*, and by
 " the wise, a deed of *debt*." From the words, *the like*, we must un-
 derstand, ' of purification, and *the like*.'

Likewise of 3. KATYAYANU declares what are these deeds of purification and
 Purification the like: "When an accusation has been sustained, and penance for it
 " performed, by a man, the deed certifying his purity, is known as a
 " *deed of purification*, if attested by witnesses." "In all the higher
 Peace " [classes], where an accusation is sustained, the writing which is pass-
 " ed when the dispute is finished, is known as a *deed of peace*." "When
 Boundaries " a decision is given in boundary disputes, a *deed of boundaries* is drawn
 Bail " out." PRUJAPUTI mentions a *deed of bail*: " When the bailee carries the
 and " very thing bailed, again to another for pledge, he shall cause a *deed*
 " *of pledge* to be recorded in writing, and give with it the deed [he
 " received], in the first instance."

4. YANYUWULKYU also: ¹ Having discharged the whole debt, he "should tear up the writing, or cause another to be executed for acquittance." Acquittances.

5. NARUDU thus lays down the difference between the two kinds of writings before mentioned, those made with a person's own hand and by that of another: ² "Documentary evidence is declared to be of two sorts; [the first] in the handwriting of the party himself, which need not have subscribing witnesses; and [the second,] in that of another person, which ought to be attested: the validity of both depends on the usage of the country." YANYUWULKYU: ³ "But every document which is in the handwriting of the party himself, is considered as sufficient evidence, even without witnesses, unless obtained by force or fraud." Force, duress. Fraud, desire [to cheat], or the like. THE SAME author states a distinction among those done by another: ⁴ "Whatever contract has been agreed upon between parties by mutual consent, a writing shall be made of it, attested by witnesses, headed with the name of the obligor; and ⁵ the year, month, fortnight, day, name, tribe, family, *scholastic title*, the names of the parties' fathers, &c. must be specified." *Scholastic title*, as, 'one well qualified in a branch of the *Rug Vedu*,' or the like; taking his name from a particular qualification, as, a *Rug Vedee*, a student of the *Rug Vedu*. THE SAME author says: ⁶ "When the transaction is completed, the borrower should sign his name with his own hand; adding, 'what is above written has the assent of me, son of such a one;' and the witnesses, being *equal*, shall also write, putting the names of their father first, 'I, such an one, am

Execution of Writings
XXV.

1—Macnaghten. page 459.

2—Digest, 1st. 21. Macnaghten, p. 443-454, q. v. Of the different readings here referred to, I have adopted that of the Digest, as more intelligible, [the other seeming to infer four kinds] and agreeable to our author.

3—Digest, 1st. 23.

4—Digest, 1st, 24.

5 and 6—Digest, 1st, 21-25. Macnaghten, 444-445.

“witness to this writing.” And the writer shall then write at the end,
 “ [of the deed itself] ‘this has been written by me, the son of such an
 “ one, having been sought for the purpose by both parties.’ ” *Equal*,
 in number and qualifications. In some copies, for equal, they read *unequal*,
 by inserting the letter U [the negative sign]. NARUDU: “That debtor
 “ who is ignorant of the art of writing, shall cause to be written his
 “ assent; or if the witness be so, by means of another witness, in pre-
 “ sence of all the witnesses.”

Royal deeds
 XXVI.
 Viz. of Gift.
 6. YANYUWULKYU and BRUHUSPUTI illustrate the three kinds of royal
 Edicts, before alluded to: ² “Let a king, having given land or assigned
 “ *fixed property*, cause his gift to be written, for the information of
 “ good princes who will succeed him, either on prepared silk, or on a
 “ plate of copper, sealed above with his own signet. ³ “Having described
 “ his ancestors and himself, and *stating* the quantity of the *gift*, with
 “ the *measure* of the *acquisition*, and the *divisions*, and set his own hand
 “ to it, and specified the time, let him render his donation firm.” *Fixed*
property, a corrody in mines or the like, given by the king or others,
 having the probable gains fixed. That which is received, is an *acqui-*
sition, whether land or any other thing. *Its measure*, stating it to be so
 much. That which is given, is a *gift*, whether a house or any other
 thing. *Its divisions*, are the boundaries. *Stating*, reciting. Moreover: “If
 Favor
 and
 Decrees.
 “ the king, pleased with the service or bravery of any one, bestow on
 “ him a district or other [portion of land], by a written deed, that is
 “ a writing of favor.” “When the king, after going through the plaint,
 “ answer, proofs, and decision, in a cause, issues a written [decree] to
 “ the gaining party, that is called a writing of victory.” ⁴

1—Macnaghten, page 444. Digest, 1st, p. 36, where this text is ascribed to Vyasa.

2—Digest, 2nd, 102, q. v. 3—For examples of this, see Asiatic Researches, vol. 9th, page 108–406. &c.

4—A text similar to this will be found, attributed to Vasishtu, in Macnaghten, p. 457.

7. VYASU thus mentions the king's deputy: "A Secretary specially appointed by the king himself, shall fully write down the King's grants or orders, either for peace or war, on copper plates, or else on strong cloth." And here THE SAME author mentions what is to be written by the king, as his own signature of acknowledgment: "He shall himself write with his own hand, the *boundaries* and *measurement* [of the disputed land, adding] 'done before me, the son of such an one, being king of such a place.'" *Boundaries, and measurement*; their acceptance will be understood from the former texts. Their execution. XXVII.

8. But VUSISHTHU mentions four kinds of royal writings: "*Grants* are to be considered as the first, and next *decrees*; these, with his *orders*, and *respectful correspondence*, are the four kinds of royal writings." "That writing, whereby he communicates any business to the heads of districts, to his servants, and to the guardian of the kingdom, is called a letter of *orders*." "That whereby he makes known any business to his family priest, his domestic chaplain, or his spiritual teacher, all persons to be respected and worshipped, is termed a letter of *respectful* address." *Grants*, and *decrees*, are already mentioned. Royal Orders, and private Correspondence.

9. YANYUWULKYU: ¹ "An instrument being in another country, or badly written, or destroyed, or effaced, or stolen, or torn, or burned, or divided, he shall cause another to be executed." NARUDU: ² "In the case of an instrument being deposited in another country, or destroyed, or badly written, or stolen; should it be in existence, time must be allowed; should it not be in existence, ocular *evidence* must be resorted to." *Evidence*, witnesses; in their absence, ordeal; for it is said by KATYAYUNU: "In the absence of writings and witnesses, they may exhibit [proof by] ordeal in judicial matters." YANYUWULKYU: ³ Renewal and proof of Writings.

1—Macnaghten. page 457. Digest, 1st, §95.

2—Macnaghten, p. 457.

3—A text very similar to this is found in Macnaghten, p. 458, yet there are so many points of difference that I cannot safely adopt it, in opposition to the commentary of the Muyookhu.

XXVIII. "The correctness or validity of a disputed or doubtful writing, may be established by [comparing it with] something written [by the Defendant] with his own hand, or the like [test]; by its *fitness*, the *possibility of receipt*, the existing *evidence*; *marks*; established connection, or *circumstances*; *title*, and such *reasonable marks*." *Fitness*, the [debtor's] want of money. *Possibility of receipt*, residence of both parties in one place. *Marks*, impression of a seal, and the like. *Evidence*, by witnesses, or other proof. *Circumstances*, amounting to connexion, as, the possible means of receipt [of the matter in dispute]. *Title*, some possible mode of acquisition. *Reasons*, inferences. PRUJAPUTI: "A decision is to be made with the greatest care, when royal orders of a king are exhibited, by producing the impression of the seal set with the king's own hand, and the hand-writing of his Secretary."

Invalid
Deeds.

10. BRUHUSPUTI states what are bad deeds: "A writing made by persons dying, inimical, in fear, or in pain; by women; by intoxicated or profligate persons; by those diseased; or, [obtained] at night, or by fraud, or violence, does not stand good." "When only one witness, [and he] accused of crime, or a vile person, has attested a deed, it is called a false deed; and where the writer is a similar person, it is considered the same."

SECTION II.

ON EVIDENCE BY POSSESSION. [BHOKTI]

—o—o—o—

Evidence
by posses-
sion.

1. NARUDU: "Possession, with a clear title [*Agumu*] affords evi-

1—Macnaghten, p. 430. For "title," see Strange's Elements, 1st, 31.

“ dence; but possession constitutes no evidence, if unaccompanied by a “ clear title.” VYASU mentions [possession as] distinguished by various qualities, similar to that supported by title: ¹ “ Possession is fivefold; “ titled, long, continuous, uninterrupted, and known to the adverse party.”
 // NARUDU declares the imperfection of [right in] the thing contested, when supported by enjoyment only: ² “ He who simply pleads possession, but no title, in consequence of proving such false possession, is “ to be considered a thief.”

2. And this is to be taken within a period fit for recollection of legal title: But where it is not fit, even enjoyment alone is declared to be sufficiently valid, by THE SAME author: ³ “ In cases falling “ within the memory of man [*Smarthu kalu*] possession with a title is admitted as evidence. In cases extending beyond the memory of man, the “ hereditary succession of three ancestors, is admitted as evidence, even “ *though the title be not produced.*” *Though the title be not produced*; the absence of title arising from the non-attainment of that fit period; because of the impossibility of determining it afterwards. In cases beyond the age of man also, THE SAME author says, on the applying to recollection in the absence of title ⁴: “ He who enjoys without right, “ even for many hundred years, the ruler of the earth should inflict on “ that sinner the punishment of a thief.”

When it
constitutes
Title, and
how.

XXIX.

3. But whereas he again says: ⁵ “ When possession has been held, “ even by injustice, by three former men, including the father [of the “ present occupant], that is not capable of being taken away from him, “ when it has gone in order through three lives:” This means, ‘ If property enjoyed even without legal title, as well as after unjust acquisition, by three former persons including his father, is not capable of being

1—Macnaghten, p. 430.

2—Macnaghten, p. 430.

3—Macnaghten p. 431. It is attributed in the Mitakshur to Katyayunu.

4—Macnaghten, p. 424-432.

5 Reports 1. 367.

taken away, how much less so, when it is impossible to fix the absence of legal title [in the present occupant].’ Since also, there is a text of HAREETU: “When possession has been held without very good title, “but by three former men, that cannot be taken away when it has “gone in order through three lives,” this must be considered as of possession without a good title proper for attainment of property, and not without the form of a title altogether.

Proof of it;
of whom re-
quired.

xxx.

4. What is further said in a text of YANYUWULKYU: ¹ “He, by “whom a title has been obtained, must produce it when impugned, but “his son and grandson need not; for them, possession is of weight,” only means, that the maker of the title alone is punishable in default of proving it, and not his sons or other heirs: but the fulfilment of their intent does not consequently [follow]. Even as HAREETU says: ² “He, “by whom a title has been acquired, is subject to penalty in case of “not producing it; but not his son, or his grandson; though the pos- “session of these two also, is forfeited.” YANYUWULKYU: ³ “When a “person dies during his defence of a cause, his *heirs* shall support it; “enjoyment held without legal title is there of no use.” *Heirs*, those who take shares in his estate, whether sons or other persons. *It*, the title in dispute.

Opponent's
Argument

5. On the other hand: it may be said: that the assertion of possession during a long space of time being requisite as proof, is contrary to law; because the prosecutor's defeat also occurs, from enjoyment by another during a very short space of time; from what THE SAME author “says: ⁴ “Loss accrues to him, who for twenty years, observes his “land enjoyed by another without interfering; and in the case of mov- “able property, for ten years.”

1—Macnaghten, p. 432.

2—3—Macnaghten, p. 433.

4—Reports, vol. 2nd, 373.—Macnaghten, p. 424.

6. To this it is answered, that it only means there shall be a loss Refuted.
of the fruits, or profits produced from the land, or other thing litigated,
for so long as the owner has observed [its occupation] by another, un-
contested by him; but not loss of the land, or other thing itself also,
because such interpretation would be contrary to the [former] text,¹ "He
" who enjoys without right," &c.

7. KATYAYUNU: ² "This law has been clearly settled, that no Possession
invalid.
"weight of title attaches to the possession of him who has violently
"carried off cattle, women, men, or other [animals]; neither by his son
"after him." NARUDU: "A pledge, boundaries, a minor's estate; de-
"posits, both specified and unknown; women; the property of the king,
"and that of *Shrotriya*s, are not lost to the owners by another's posses-
"sion of them." MUNOO ³: "A milch Cow, a Camel, a riding horse; XXXI.
"[a bull, or other beast] which has been *sent to be tamed* for labour;
"and other things used with friendly assent, are not lost, [by length of
"time], to the owner." *Sent to be tamed*, what is given in charge to
another for the sake of taming.

SECTION III.

ON EVIDENCE BY WITNESSES [SAKSHI].

1. In the Toduranundu, NARUDU says: "But in doubtful matters, when Evidence
by
Witnesses.
"two men are disputing, strict attention must be paid to their witnesses,
"as to what was seen, heard, or understood."

¹—Para. 2nd.

²—A somewhat similar text is found in Macnaghten, p. 424.

³—Chap. 8th v. 146.

Their
nature.

2. BRUHOSPUTI states the distinctions of them: "Witnesses are
" declared to be of twelve sorts, *written, caused to be written, concealed,*
" *or recollected* ¹; a member of the family, a messenger; a *spontaneous*
" *witness* ² and *one in answer*; another man employed in the business;
" the king; his *superintendent* [*Udhyukshu*]; and likewise the village."
Written, entered by the Plaintiff in a deed. *Caused to be written*, one
entered [in the same] by the Defendant at the Plaintiff's request. *Con-*
cealed, one made to hear behind a partition, or the like. *Recollected*,
reminded from time to time of the business [to be proved]. *Spontaneous*,
a witness coming to give evidence of his own accord. *One in answer*,
speaking after other witnesses, upon hearing or being, told [their evi-
dence]. *Superintendent*, the chief judge: and this is meant to include the
assessors and other [members of the Court], by reason of this text of
KATYAYONU: "The Secretary, chief judge, and assessors in succession,
XXXII. "[are witnesses when the king presides in a cause]" ³

And num-
ber.

3. THE SAME author ⁴ says: "There shall be nine, seven, or five,
" [witnesses]; even four or three; or two may be taken, if they are
" both *Shrotriyus*; a single witness shall not be examined at any time."
" *Written* witnesses shall be two, as well as *concealed* ones; three, four
" or five, shall be the number of those *caused to be written, spontaneous, re-*
" *minded*, men of the family, and likewise, those called *in answer*; a mes-
" senger, and accountant, and likewise one employed in the business, may
" give evidence as a single witness, and the king, as well as the su-
" perintendent [and other officers of the Court]"

One witness
when legal.

4. YANTUVULKYU declares the admissibility, even of the *written* witness

1--Bentham's Treatise on evidence, page 26-57.

2--Ditto, ditto page 60.—The term in Sanscrit signifies 'self willed.'

3--The last hemistich is omitted in the text, and supplied here from Macnaghten, page 412.

4--Probably Bruhsputi, elucidating his own preceding text.

and the rest, as a single witness, with mutual consent of both parties :¹
 “ By the consent of both parties, even one person, of virtuous know-
 ledge, may be a witness.” VYASU : “ A witness, whose actions are
 pure, and who knows his duty [towards men], whose word is known,
 is admissible, even if the only witness, when it is necessary, in crimi-
 nal cases.” *Whose word is known*, often seen to be a speaker of truth.
 A single witness, if unconnected with the party, may be taken in cases
 of deposit and the like ; for KATYAYUNU says : “ In a very secret de-
 posit, even one single witness is declared admissible ; as well as one
 witness, sent by the Plaintiff in a case of things *borrowed* for use.”
Borrowed, ornaments or other Jewellery, as ear ornaments or the like,
 obtained for the sake of a wedding, or the like. THE SAME author says
 one witness is also admissible in disputes about saleable articles : “ They
 shall cause the article to be identified by the very man who finished
 it ; that single witness is in such a dispute declared good evidence.”

5. VYASU details their qualifications : “ Persons religiously brought
 up, fathers of sons, purely descended, of a good family, veracious
 speakers ; constantly performing their duties towards Gods and men,
 who have forsaken hate and envy ; *Shrotriya*s, and those independant ;
 Learned Men ; persons stationary ; and young men, may all be
 received as witnesses in cases of debt or the like, by the wise.”

Requisite
qualifica-
tions

XXXIII.

6. NARUDU : “ Among companies of artizans, men who are artizans
 shall be witnesses ; and *men of one tribe* among those of the same ; fo-
 reigners [outcasts] among those living outside, and women among women.”
 KATYAYUNU tells us who are *men of one tribe* [*Vurgu*] : “ BHRUGOO calls
 them men of one tribe, who are wearers of [false] tokens¹, members of

1—Macnaghten, page 447-449.

2—Lingee. The context would induce us to apply it to the Lingayut Vances of the Dukhun, who do actually wear a Lingu upon their arms as a distinctive mark.

“Joint companies and of separate trades¹; and other merchants; also
 “communities [*Sumoohusthu*] and other such men. The *Nayukus* of the
 “several communities, whether of slaves, bards, wrestlers, or the drivers
 “of elephants, horses, and carriages, are termed in law, *Vurgi*.” *YAN-*
YUWULKYU makes this mention of those of another Cast: ² “There
 “should [in general] be three witnesses; persons who take delight in
 “acts ordained in the *Vedu* and in sacred law books; and properly,
 “they should be of the same sex, and class, with the party for whom
 “they give evidence: but, if that cannot be, those of all classes may
 “be examined.”

Inadmissi-
 ble witness-
 es.

xxxiv.

7. THE SAME author tells us who are excluded: ³ “A woman, a
 “minor, an old man, a gamester, an intoxicated person, a madman, an
 “infamous person, a juggler, an infidel, a forger, one deformed, one de-
 “graded from Caste, a friend, one interested in the subject matter, a
 “partner, an enemy, a robber, a public offender, one convicted, *an out-*
cast, and others, are incompetent witnesses.” *An outcast*, turned out by
 his own family. From the phrase, *and others*, slaves and the like must
 be understood. *BRUHUSPUTI*: “The evidence of a mother’s father, and
 “of a father’s Brother; of a wife’s Brother, and her maternal Uncle; of
 “a Brother and his son; a friend, and a daughter’s husband, is in-
 “admissible in all disputes.” *NARUDU*: ⁴ “He, who not having been
 “pointed out, comes and offers his evidence, is technically called a self-
 “spoken man; he is not proper to be examined in evidence.” *KATYAYU-*
NU ⁵ “Of witnesses recorded, and summoned by a litigant party,
 “should one utter a contradiction, all will be rendered incompetent by
 “that contradiction.”

1—Sreni and Poogah, for which see chap. 1st sec. 1st para. 10; sec. 2d para. 1st—and chap. 12th para. 3.

2—Macnaghten p. 442 Dig. 1st 22.

3—Macnaghten, p. 446 Reports 1st 105-6-7.

4—Macnaghten, p. 446.

5—Macnaghten, p. 445.

8. Of these also, NARUDU declares in some cases the admissibility: Exceptions.
 “Slaves, degraded persons, and the rest, who are declared not to be
 “[legal] witnesses, may also be admitted to give evidence, with due
 “consideration of the weight of the matter in dispute.” In the absence,
 says MUNOO: ¹ “On failure [of witnesses duly qualified,] evidence may
 “[in such cases] be given by a woman, by a child, or by an aged man;
 “by a pupil, by a kinsman, by a slave, or by a hired servant.” YAN-
 YUWULKYU: ² “All persons may be witnesses, in cases of *adultery*,
 “theft, affray, and criminal business.” Here, the separate mention of
adultery, and the rest, in treating of actions of a criminal nature, has
 reference to the act of adultery or other [offence] in a secret way.
 OOSHUNA: “A slave, a blind man, one deaf, a woman, a minor, an
 “old man, and the like, these persons also, if *unconnected* with the par-
 “ty, are admitted as witnesses, in criminal cases.” *Unconnected*, not
 partial to either side,

9. BRUHUSPUTI: “Witnesses acquainted with the matter, if there be any
 “objections to them, they shall declare faulty; if *the opponent* charge as
 “faulty [witnesses] who have no fault, he is worthy of a fine *equal to it*.”
 The *opponent* [*vadee*] here means the defendant. *Equal to it*, an amount
 equal to what forms the ground of suit. VYASU: “Objections to witnesses
 “are to be recited in Court by the Defendant; and they shall cause to be
 “read out [to the witnesses] all the objections, when taken down in writing,
 “and they shall give a reply to them.” The meaning is, ‘having clearly set
 before the witnesses the disqualifications alleged, as taken down in
 writing [from the Defendant], they shall be made by the Court to state
 their explanations on the subject.’ THE SAME author says: “But on their
 “admission [of the disqualifications], their evidence is never at any time

Objections
to receipt
of evidence
XXXV.

and
proceedings
thereon.

1—Chap. 8th v. 70. Reports 1st 105.

2—Macnaghten, p. 447.

“ fit to be received. But [if the case is] *otherwise*, the objections must
 “ be *substantiated, with evidence*, by the Defendant.” ¹ “ A person failing
 “ to establish an exception openly made against witnesses, should be
 “ punished; but if proved, the witnesses are to be dismissed, and depriv-
 “ ed of the privilege of giving evidence.” “ Moreover, they shall undergo
 “ humiliation in the mode consonant to the *Shastru*: provided the Plain-
 “ tiff’s sole reliance has been placed on the veracity of the witnesses.” *If*
otherwise, in case of their not confessing. *Substantiated*, made to ac-
 knowledge it. *With evidence*, by proof. The meaning is, that the charge
 shall be substantiated as clearly as possible.

Further ex-
 planations.

XXXVI.

10. However, this text: “ Objections to witnesses, apparent to the
 “ members of the Court, or those universally admitted by the world to
 “ be true, are to be taken for granted, and not to be considered as re-
 “ quiring proof with a view to obviate that particular disqualification,”
 has reference to witnesses publicly known to be in the confidence of the
 party. ² In case of these disqualifications being unknown to the Defendant,
 THE SAME author says: “ Those objections in proof [which are known] are
 “ to be declared by the defendant; but concealed faults are to be made mani-
 “ fest by assessors in the time [of trial], by pointing them out from the *Shastru*.”

Time for
 stating
 them.

11. This is the meaning, ‘ That concealed [objections] are to be declared,
 by quoting the *Shastru* upon them, at [any] time before the witnesses
 speak.’ But they are not to be mentioned afterwards, for thus says
 BRUHUSPUTI: “ For any legal objections to written deeds, as well as
 “ to witnesses, which may exist, are to be declared in the time of trial;
 “ if *mentioned* afterwards, it shall not vitiate them as proof.” *Mentioned*,
 proper to be spoken; that is, ‘ proper to be stated in the commencement,

1—Macnaghten, p. 448.

2—Bentham on evidence, page 46—applies here, in as far as the Members of the Court are not bound to shut
 their eyes to their own knowledge.

according to the rule of grammar, “ The affix [*ktuh*] implies an act “ begun and not past ¹ and likewise an agent.” Here this affix denotes the agent. Here, their punishment is stated by KATYAYUNU: “ He “ who, when the matter has been spoken, shall charge, as disqualified, wit- “ nesses before unsullied, and shall not state any cause for it, shall receive “ the lowest amercement.” In case of the inability of the witnesses to explain away the objections urged against them, the Plaintiff must do it; thus says BRUHUSPUTI: “ The action of him whose documents or witnesses in a “ cause are alleged to be faulty, shall not be favorably adjudged, so long “ as he fails to clear *them* from the charge.” *Them*, the documents, &c.

12. KATYAYUNU declares the punishment for suborning false witnesses : “ He, by whom false witnesses have been set up, through wicked desire of “ gaining any object, shall have the whole of his property confiscated, and “ then have his *object made null*.” *Object made null*, go without the object of his suit. Subornation
of Perjury.

13. NARUDU declares the means of discovering false witnesses : “ He “ who, by reason of his wicked state, caused by his own crimes, appears as “ if irresolute, goes from place to place, or runs after every person ; who “ suddenly coughs much, and likewise every now and then draws his “ breath ; who scratches, as if writing, with his feet ; and who shakes his “ hand and clothes ; whose face changes color, and whose forehead sweats ; “ whose lips become dry, who looks above and about him, and who “ speaks much, in a hurried manner, without restraint, unquestioned, such an “ one is to be known for a false witness ; they shall punish one so sinning “ severely.” False wit-
nesses.

XXXVII.

14. KATYAYUNU and MUNOO ² state the mode of examining witnesses : “ In the forenoon, let the Judge, being purified, severally call on the twice Examina-
tion of
Witnesses.

1—(Cole, Mit, 306 note.)

2—Chap. 8th v. 87. Macnaghten, p. 447.

“ born, being purified also, to declare the truth in the presence of [some
 “ image, a symbol of] the divinity, and of *Brahmuns*, while the witnesses
 “ turn their faces either to the North or to the East.” MUNOO: 1 “ The
 “ witnesses being assembled in the middle of the Court-room, in the pre-
 “ sence of the Plaintiff and the Defendant, let the Judge examine them,
 “ after having addressed them [all together,] in the following manner: ‘ What
 “ ye know to have been transacted in the matter before us, between the
 “ parties reciprocally, declare at large, and with truth; for your evidence
 “ in this cause is required.’ ”

Production
 of the dis-
 puted arti-
 cle,

XXXVIII.

15. In disputes about kine, horses, and the like, THE SAME author requires the production of the thing in dispute: “ In the presence of the
 “ Plaintiff and Defendant, and in company with the thing to be proved,
 “ they shall cause them to state their evidence openly; not at any time
 “ without having it before their eyes. Evidence may be given upon the
 “ disputed article alone, *without either attending, in some cases*; this is
 “ the law in causes respecting quadrupeds, and likewise in those for bi-
 “ peds, and fixed property.” “ In disputes about *articles of weight, number,*
 “ or *measure,* 2 they may also in its *absence*, cause the witnesses to
 “ state their evidence. In all *matters capable of proof*, evidence is requi-
 “ site, but not otherwise,” *Without either, in some cases*; that is, without
 both the Plaintiff and Defendant, in presence of the disputed article. *In*
some cases, meaning, in cases of quadrupeds and the rest. *Articles of*
weight, gold, or the like, proper to be weighed. *Of number*, coin or the

1—Chap. 8th v. 79-80. Macpaghten 447. Strange, 1st 310.

2—The Gloss enumerating only articles of quantity, it might be doubtful, did common sense allow such a sup-
 position, whether articles measured by length were not excluded, but the latitude always claimed for
 that frequently occurring phrase, ‘the like,’ would include measures of length as well as quantity.
 Adi, et cætera, the like, the rest. The same is not unknown to the English Law. Burn’s Justice, Preface
 to 1st edition. “ Also, upon another account, he hath sometimes made use of more words than otherwise
 “ he would have done, namely, to avoid the frequent repetition of the term, &c. which is a *vague expression*
 “ and apt to create uneasiness in the reader’s mind, for that he cannot be satisfied from thence how much
 “ or how little is intended to be understood.”

like, fit to be counted. *Of measure*, things proper to be measured, as rice, wheat, and the like. *In absence*, in default of the production of the thing to be proved. *In matters capable of proof*, in disputes at law.

16. In cases involving murder, THE SAME author says, the depositions of witnesses are to be taken in presence of SIVU: "In charges of killing living creatures, they shall deliver their evidence in presence of SIVU; in default of the marks, they shall cause them to deliver it; not *otherwise*." *It*, the deposition of the witnesses, to be given in default of marks of the murder. *Otherwise*, in existence of marks of the murder. THE SAME author says: "Procrastination must not be used by the king in the examination of witnesses; it becomes a great fault, by reason of the time [lost], and bears the quality of denial of justice." NARUDU: "Having called the witnesses, and bound them down firmly by an oath, he shall examine them separately, all of them well versed in the established rules of life, and acquainted with the matter in dispute." VUSISHTHU: "That act, which was seen by all of them together, is to be told by them even in the same manner [together]; but that which was [seen] by them separate, shall be related separately by each. But where the acts known by the witnesses, were done at different times, each shall then be made to depose [separately]; this rule is declared."

Further rules for examination of witnesses.

XXXIX.

17. MUNOO: ¹ "Let the Judge cause a *Brahmun* to swear by his veracity; a *Kshutriyu*, by his horse, or elephant, and his weapons; a *Vaishyu*, by his kine, grain and gold; a mechanic, or servile man, [*Shoodru*] by [imprecating on his own head, if he speaks falsely,] all possible crimes." "*Brahmun*s who tend herds of Cattle, who trade, who practise mechanical arts, who profess dancing and singing, who are hired servants, or usurers, let the Judge

Tendering of Oaths.

¹—Chap. 8th v. 118, 102. see post. Chap. 3. para 3.

“ exhort and examine as if they were *Shoodrus*.” “ They who are fallen from
 “ their proper sphere of life ; they who live by the bodies of others ; they
 “ who long for the privileges of twice born men, are to be examined as if
 “ they were *Shoodrus*.” The meaning is, that he should exhort them thus :
 ‘ By speaking contrary [to truth], your honorable character will be lost, or
 the like.

Test of
evidence.

18. The test for depositions of witnesses is declared: “ The king shall
 “ declare the matter in dispute clearly proved, if the evidence be nothing
 “ wanting, as to the place, [or country], the time, age, thing in dispute itself,
 “ the name, cast, [family or kind,] its weight [or measure].” YANYUWUL-
 KYU states this [rule for] decision on the counter statements of wit-
 nesses: ¹ “ If the evidence be discordant, the testimony of the greater
 “ number shall prevail; if the witnesses be equal in number, the testimony
 “ of the virtuous; if virtuous men depose two inconsistent facts, the testi-
 “ mony of those who are most eminent by their honesty.”

Punishment
for refusing
to give evi-
dence.

19. THE SAME author declares the punishment for not deposing after
 having agreed to give evidence: “ If a man does not give his evidence, he
 “ shall be made by the king to pay *the whole* debt, with a *tenth* imposed
 “ besides, before the lapse of forty-six days.” *The whole*, including interest.
A tenth, together with a tenth share. This tenth share is to be taken [from
 the witness] by the king; and the debt, with its interest, is to be taken [from
 the same] by the creditor. This is on the authority of the MITAKSHURA.

XL.

The punishment for refusal to give evidence, by a witness knowing [any thing
 of the matter] is thus stated by THE SAME author: ² “ He who, having been
 “ called on for his testimony, being influenced by his passions, conceals it
 “ from others, should *be made to pay* eight fold, and *if a Brahmun*, should
 “ suffer expulsion.” *Be made to pay, eight times* as much as the fine laid

¹—Cole Digest, 1st, 233, note. Macnaghten, p. 449.

²—Macnaghten, p. 452.

down for a defeat; if he be a *Brahmun*, and unable to pay this fine, he is to be banished. *Kshutrigus* and the other [lower casts] are to be made to work at their own proper profession, according to the *MITAKSHURA*.

20. MUNOO: ¹ “The witness who has given evidence, and to whom
“ within seven days after, [a misfortune] happens, [from] disease, fire, or the
“ death of a kinsman, shall be condemned to pay the debt, and a fine.”
YANYUWULKYU: “Even when evidence has been delivered by witnesses,
“ if other more excellent witnesses, or double the number of the first,
“ depose contrary to them, the first witnesses shall be declared false.”

Further
test.

21. NARUDU: “But after the cause has been decided, all proof, whether
“ by documents or witnesses, shall be useless, provided it were not made
“ known before.”

Limit to
receipt of
evidence.

22. YANYUWULKYU declares a command for witnesses giving untrue statements in some cases, and the penance for so doing: ² “Where men of the
“ four great classes would be liable to suffer capital punishment, there in-
“ deed the witness may speak untruths: A *Saruswutu* oblation must be
“ presented by regenerate men; for the sake of purification from the offence.”
VISHNOO declares the penance for *Shoodrus*: “And a *Shoodru* shall give one
“ day’s fodder for ten kine.” One day’s, that is, what will be fully sufficient
for their food during one whole day. Thus far of Witnesses.

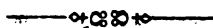
Perjury
when law-
ful.

1—Chap. 8th, v. 108.

2—Macnaghten, p. 454 q. v.

CHAPTER III.

ON ORDEAL, [*DIVYUM*.]



1. It has been thought useless and unnecessary to translate the Chapter on Ordeals, of which a sufficiently copious account is given in Sir F. Macnaghten's work on Hindoo Law, page 460 et seq., to which, as well as to a very interesting paper in the first volume of the Asiatic Researches, page 389, on the same subject, the reader is referred. But as one mode of Ordeal is by oath, the section relating to it is here added, for the satisfaction of those who consider an oath necessary duly to appreciate testimony; though it will be observed, this oath of Ordeal evidently refers to the litigating parties, and not to witnesses.

Nine sorts
of it.

2. Nine modes of Ordeal having been discussed in order, [as enumerated in the following text of BRUḤSPUTI: ¹ "Ordeal by the Scales, by Fire, and

1—Ellis's Lectures, part the third. "Oaths and Ordeals; the several kinds of expurgatory ordeals [namely, " according to Yanyuwulkyu and others, Ugni divyū, by fire; Julu divyū, by water; Vishu divyū, " by poison; Koshu divyū, by holy water: and, according to Narada and others, Tandoolu divyū, by " chewing dry rice; Tuptu mashu divyū, by taking gold from clarified butter while hot; Phaludivyū, " by the hot plough share; Dhurmujū divyū, by taking one of two images, representing justice and " injustice, from a covered pot;] occasions on which the Ordeals may be lawfully performed; the penalty " incurred by the party demanding the ordeal, in case his adversary succeeds in performing it; the sea- " sons of the year in which, and the persons, considered with respect to caste, age, sex, &c. by whom, " the several ordeals may be legally performed; nature of the ordeals to be performed in suits for pro- " perty, determined by the value of the thing in dispute; places where the ordeals can be legally per- " formed; the punishment to be inflicted for failure in an ordeal; ceremonies common to all Ordeals, as " Oopuvasunum, fasting, &c.; particulars to be observed in the performance of the several Ordeals; and " first, in the ordeal of the balance: materials of which the scales are to be made; mode in which this " ordeal is to be performed; the same with respect to the ordeal by fire, water, poison, holy water, rice, " gold, the plough-share, and images; different kinds of imprecatory Oaths, and occasions on which they " are lawful."

“ by Water, [are the three first]; that by Poison [the fourth], and by con-
 “ secrated Water, [*Koshu*] is the fifth; that by Rice is stated as the sixth,
 “ that by Burning Oil the seventh, that by Iron is named as the eighth, and
 “ that by Lot is recorded as the ninth,”] * * * * *

* * * * * we come to

3. OATHS [*Shuputha*,] MUNOO: ¹ “ Let the Judge cause a *Brahmun* to
 “ swear by his veracity; a *Kshutriyu*, by his horse, or elephant, and his wea-
 “ pons; a *Vaishyu*, by his kine, grain, and gold; a mechanic, or servile man,
 “ [*Shoodru*] by [imprecating on his own head, if he speak falsely,] all possi-
 “ ble crimes.” And BRUHUSPUTI says, “ A man’s honor, vehicles, weapons,
 “ kine, seed, and gold; [imprecation] by the feet of the Gods and of *Brah-*
 “ *muns*, and by the heads of his children or wife; all these oaths are de-
 “ clared at all times attainable in small disputes. In criminal accusations,
 “ ordeals are declared purificatory.”

Ordeal by
Oath.
LXXXI.

In what
cases per-
mitted.

4. YANYUWULKYU: “ He, upon whom no *frightful* calamity happens,
 “ whether by the act of God or the King, within the term of fourteen days,
 “ shall be held pure; there is no doubt.” *Frightful*, great. One of small
 moment, according to the MITAKSHURA, [does not affect him], because of
 the non-inviolability of mortal bodies. KATYAYUNU also: “ He to whom
 “ a *frightful calamity* does not happen, whether by the act of God or the
 “ King, within fourteen days, is to be known as one pure by his oath.”
Calamity, accident. *Frightful*, causing great anguish. According to LXXXII.
 VACHUSPUTI MISRU and SMARTHU BHUTTACHARYU, a small accident does
 not affect him, because it is the lot of humanity. Again KATYAYUNU says:
 “ Now in case of contradiction [of the Oath] by the Gods, within twice seven
 “ days, the debtor shall be made, by every possible means, to pay the money

The result
how deter-
mined.

1—Chap. 8th, v. 113, Ante. Chap. 2. Sec. 3, para. 17.

“ sued for, and a fine as well.” “ When *to him alone*, and not to all, there happens disease, fire, or the death of a near relation, he shall be made to pay the debt, and a fine.” “ Fever, dysentery, boils, great pains in the deep seated bones, diseases of the eyes, or of the throat, or madness, and pains in the head, with loss of use of the hand, are the heaven-directed diseases of mankind.” *In contradiction by the Gods*, death of a relation or the like, happening to him alone. By this, [is intended], the exclusion of epidemic diseases and the like. Here, by the phrase *to him alone*, distinguishing the beforementioned debtor, is meant the mark of disease or the other calamity accruing to the debtor alone, not to his sons or other [relatives]: and those, only great, not slight ones, as has been already mentioned. By this reasoning, it means only a mark appearing against the defendant himself, as some uncommon disease, or the like, according to VACHUSPUTI MISRU. For this very reason, the death of a near relation is specified, but not their diseases or the like.

CHAPTER IV.

ON INHERITANCE, [DAYU VIBHAGU].

SECTION I.

OF PROPERTY OR OWNERSHIP, [SVUTVUM].



1. Now we come to speak of such Ownership, as is necessary for deciding regarding heritable property. The distinctions as to its power and operation, are produced by purchase, acceptance, &c. The reason of this is, that the causes of purchases, &c. arise from worldly transactions alone, not from the *Shastru*; for proprietary rights are understood even by those not acquainted with that sacred code, in deducing it from which the subject is needlessly enlarged. BHUVUNATHU is of this opinion in his *NUYU VIVEKU*.

Generation
of
Property.

LXXXIII.

2. As for the text of GOUTUMU: ¹ "An owner is by inheritance, purchase, partition, seizure, or finding. Acceptance is for a *Brahmun* an additional mode; conquest for a *Kshutriyu*; gain for a *Vaishyu* or *Shoodru*," it is by way of repetition in matters established in the world. For people admit inheritance [to be] in that, which becomes one's own by the mere loss of the Owner's property therein. The word *mere* is used to include purchase, seizure, [or acceptance] and the rest. Here even, in such like loss, the word inheritance, has force; by reason of its joint application [in the text] to purchase and the other means of ownership: And the same may be proved by the argument, that 'without admitting a cause [there can be no effect].'

Text of
GOUTUMU
explained.

3. According to DHARESHWURU ACHARYU: 'The ownership of sons and the rest, in the wealth of the father, is not generated previously during his life,

Argument,
that owner-
ship is ge-

¹—Cole. Mit. 244-250. Reports, vol. 2d, 312. 574.

nerated by
birth, not
by parti-
tion.

LXXXIV.

but is produced by partition.' And the author of the *SMṚITI SUNGRUHU* says the same. But it is not so; for, from the plain sense of this text: "Even by birth, ownership in wealth is obtained," and other similar ones, it is evident, that, ownership in the father's wealth depending on the filial relation, it is generated even by the production of a son. And [the same results] from this text of *YANYUWULKYU*:¹ "For the ownership of father and son is the same, in land which was acquired by the *grandfather*, or in a *corody*, or in chattels which belonged to him." And this does not mean, 'that the reason of the acquisition of ownership is found in the grandfather's death, and not in the production of a son,' for [if it did], such ownership would be wanting, in case no grandson were to be born to him up to the time of his death. In this way therefore, either the word *grandfather* is of no use [in the argument]; or it follows *à fortiori* [*prusukteh*] that there is no equal ownership in [property] acquired by the great-grandfather, and other [more remote ancestors]. And the argument of 'cause and effect' might here be repeated.

Text of
DEVULU,

4. As for this text of *DEVULU*:² "When the father is deceased, let the sons divide the father's wealth; for sons have not ownership, while the father is alive and free from defect;" the first hemistich comprehends up to the time of partition, because it declares the [ascertainment or] instrument, or agents, of the [act or] ceremony; but the last hemistich refers to their dependance, as declaring the same person's praises; but it does not mean the absence of ownership. It is also made clear in this text of *SHUNKHU*:

and of
SHUNKHU,

explained.

"From this it results, that while the father lives, sons shall not divide the wealth: *even if there should be afterwards an increase by* [means of] *them*, still the sons are unfit, by reason of their *dependance* upon the wealth and religious offices of the father." Here, *dependance* is specified immediately, with a view more strongly to inculcate the foregoing prohibition.

¹—Cole. Mit. 277-S.

²—Coleb. Jim. Va. page 9. Digest 2d, 522.

' *Even if by them subsequently*, [he made]' is the proper interpretation. *By them*, by the sons, subsequently to their birth. *Increase*, what is obtained by acceptance, or the like. The proposition is this: 'If in property accepted by sons or other [heirs], their dependance [is clear] from the [father's] undisputed ownership, how [can we doubt their dependance] in property acquired by the father.' And this dependance attaches to partition, supererogatory moral observances, industry, and the like. So also HAREETU: ¹ "While the father lives, sons are not independent in regard to the receipt and alienation of wealth, to the partition of it, or to censure." By the words receipt and alienation, supererogation is pointed out. Censure, according to MUDUNU, means, reproving of the slaves and other [household servants].

LXXXV.

5. As for this text: ² "The father is master of all gems, pearls, and corals; but neither the father nor the grandfather, is so of the whole immoveable estate," it also means the father's independance, only in the wearing and other [use] of ear-rings, rings, [&c.], but not as far as gift or other [alienation]: neither is it with a view to the cessation of the cause of his ownership on the production of a son. This very meaning is made manifest also by [the text] noticing [only] gems, and such things as are not injured by use. Even so, this Text: ³ "Though immovables and bipeds have been acquired by the man himself, a gift or sale of them should not be made without convening all the sons," is only a prohibition against their gift, sale, or the like, not against the use of them.

Anonymous Text, touching the power of the father and grandfather, explained.

6. Now the pre-existing undefined [joint] ownership of more than one brother or other [Coheir] is, by partition between each, defined and made

Ownership is pre-existing, and merely defined by partition.

1—Colebrooke's *Jimeetu Vahunu*, 19.—Digest, 2d 527. q. v. In all the translations of this text, as well as in some of the original versions of it, there is nothing about "partition." The word has crept in from a modern copy of the *Muyookhu* procured at Benares, and used in preparing it for the press. It will be observed that there is a variation in the readings of the last part in all the Books.

2—Cole. Mit. 254, where the word "survusun" is translated "of all [other moveable property];" but the present version is made conformable to the interpretation of our author. *Reports 2nd 457.*

3—In some works this text is assigned to Vyasa. Here and in the *Mimkshara*, page 257, it is anonymous.

apparent. On this point SOME ONE has said : “ This [ownership] is produced “ different, as a separate portion, by the destruction of the former ownership “ contained in the common property.” But, justly speaking, since prolixity arises in considering the production of another ownership on the destruction of the former ; therefore [separate] ownership, existing even originally from community [of interests], is discovered by partition, by the result furnishing separate substances or things.

LXXXVI.

Resumption
of the argu-
ment, of
GOUTUMU'S
Text, as re-
lates to
Brahmins,

7. To return to the Text ¹ : *Acceptance is for a Brahmun an additional mode* ; that is, according to some, ‘ What is obtained by acceptance, is the *Brahmun's* additional [mode of] increase.’ With reference to inheritance, and the other [five modes common to all], this acceptance is, for a *Brahmun* alone, an additional mode. It results therefore, that *conquest* and the other [modes enumerated] are in like manner [additional] for *Kshutriyus* and the rest.

To *Kshutri-
yus*,

8. In conquest also, where the property of the conquered consists in houses, lands, money, or the like, there alone [ownership] is acquired by the conqueror ; but in the *revenues* ² of the conquered, the conqueror possesses the same, but no property in them. Even so in the sixth [Book of the *MI-MANSA*] : “ The whole earth must not be given away by the king of the world, “ neither a [whole] district [*Mundulu*] by the ruler of that district.” But the property in each village, house, or other [portion] of a whole country or a district of it, belongs solely to the owner of the soil [*Bhowmiku*] or other [proprietor]. The revenue only [may be taken] by the prince. Therefore, in gift, or other alienation of such lands as are here made mention of, a gift of the land is not brought about ; we must only suppose a mere livelihood [given by the prince out of his revenues]. But in purchases from the owner of the soil, even ownership accrues in the [property transferred], whether houses, land, or other. Then indeed, the benefits of a Gift of land

The king
has no right
to the soil,
but merely
to the reve-
nue arising
from it

1— Of GOUTUMU, para. 2.

2—The terms, ‘ kuru grabita,’ ‘ kuru graba,’ are used in the same sense in the inscription in As. Res. 9th, 419, note q. v.

also may be obtained from it [by buying land from the owners and then giving it away in charity.]

9. Gain, [*Nirvvishtu*] is that which is acquired by Usury, agriculture, commerce, tending of animals; and [secondly] what is acquired by service. From the dictionaries, we find the synonymes of 'Gain' to be, '*Hire*,' and '*Enjoyment*.' *Hire* again, is defined to be Service. *Enjoyment*, is usury and the rest. Here, the first mentioned [are sources of gain] to the *Vaishyu* class: The second [service] to the *Shoodru* class.

To *Vaishyus* and *Shoodrus*.

LXXXVII.

10. Now, the reason of sale and other transfer of property, is to be deduced solely from worldly motives, [and not from Law; with which proposition we set out.] And in like manner, popular practice is established in the ownership of calves and other [produce] of a man's own cow, or the like: but it would not be so, if it depended on such means only as the Law furnishes [for deciding such a question], because we do not learn from the law the means of distinguishing the produce of one's own cow or the like.

Conclusion drawn.

11. Yet, [an opponent may say]: 'There may be ownership in daughters, sons, or other issue of a wife, in the same way as there is in the produce of one's own cow; [and], a case of necessity being assumed, [for instance,] by the rule: "In a *Visvujitu* sacrifice a man gives the whole of "his possessions," the gift of every thing being granted, the necessity thence arises for the gift of a daughter or son, and therefore your reasoning from the sixth Book of the *MIMANSA*, [that they are not to be given], will be at variance with such Rule.'

Opponent's argument,

12. [I answer] No; because, there being no such property in a wife as there is in a cow or the like, there cannot be any property in the children produced from her: And in a worldly sense, the reason of ownership is determined, solely in the production of that which contains the principles of ownership. Neither can it be said, that property may also exist in wives, from acceptance [in marriage]; for then, by reason of the absence of property possessed by *Kshutriyas* and the other [two classes in] their wives, from their

Refuted.

want of the [right of] acceptance, there is also a want of it [property] in their issue.

Argument
drawn
from affilia-
tion of an
adopted son

13. Therefore, since the Text: ¹ "This law is propounded by me in regard to sons equal by Class," restricts the taking of an adopted son solely to one equal in class; and since with respect to *Kshutriyas* and the rest, acceptance of an adopted son is even secondary; then also with respect to *Brahmans*, it is not the principal mode; because it is contrary to reason to have two contrary, but following, explanations of performing one and the same Rite.

Power of
Adoption
not restrict-
ed to
Brahmans.
LXXXVIII

14. Neither can it be said that a *Brahmun* alone is entitled to the Rite of accepting a son, and that a *Kshutriyu* is not entitled, since we know that the Right [of accepting a son] does pertain to them, from the following and other Texts of SHOUNUKU and others ²: A daughter's son as well as "a sister's son, are affiliated by *Shoodrus*." Even so, in the marriage of a *Brahmun* with the daughter of a *Kshutriyu* or other [lower class], by the *Brahmyu* Rite, the secondary rank must be admitted, both for the gift and acceptance; otherwise they are principal. Thus two explanations [of the same Rite] are [here again] opposed. As regards *Kshutriyas*, the admissibility of all to *Brahmyu* nuptials and the rest is in no degree contrary [to Texts.] Even so MISHRU in the TUNTRU RUTNU has said: 'The gift of sons and the rest is inferior [or secondary].'

A verbal
objection,
over ruled.

15. Neither are we to suppose [absolute] property, merely because the laws of language [admit the expression], 'own wife, son, daughter; for in the same way as we say 'own father,' 'own mother,' and the like, the expression also arises in speaking of kindred. If so, the power of the word 'own,' might likewise affect the term kindred, for in Dictionaries we find: "In the word *kindred*, the pronoun own [is feminine]; in *soul* [it is mas-

1—Cole. Mit. 320.

2—See Post, Sec. 5th, para. 9.

“culine]; in *kindred*, it is [common to] three [genders]; and in the expression “peculiar wealth, ¹ it is neuter.”

16. However, since in the sixth Book of the *MIMANSA*, gift of a slave born in the family is mentioned, this point must be considered. Since property in the mother is wanting, from absence of the complete power of gift, acceptance, purchase, sale, and the like, then in the household slave begotten on her, there is also an absence of the power, from the impropriety of it. This conclusion is conformable to the argument with which we set out.

Consistency
preserved.

SECTION II.

OF HERITAGE, [*DAYU*].



1. Wealth, *not re-united*, nor put back again into a common stock, and [still] admitting of partition, is Heritage. By *not re-united*, I mean to exclude wealth [never before joint, and now first] united for purposes of gain or the like, because the term ‘partition of heritage,’ does not apply to dividing of [wealth] thrown together by merchants. In like manner we must also exclude re-united property, in the sense in which that term will hereafter be defined. ². Even as [we find] in the *SMRITI SUNGRUHU*: “That which is “received through the father, and that received through a mother, is described by the term Heritage: The partition of it is now related.” And in the *NIGHUNTU*, it is said: “The learned define *heritage* to be, wealth

Definition
of the Term.

LXXXIX.

¹—In the *Umuru Koshu*, page 108, the expression is “*Svostriyan dhune*,” signifying, “the pronoun is not feminine, in the word wealth,” instead of ‘*Svunnije dhune*,’ as here. Neither in the *Trikandi*, [page 76], nor in the *Medini*, [page 154], is the reading like the *Muyookh*; and in the *Benares Copy*, it is according to the *Umuru Koshu*.

²—Post. Section. 9th,

“ of a *father*, which admits of partition.” The word *father* is merely put to denote relations in general, as a part for the whole.

It is of two kinds,

Obstructed

and unobstructed.

2. This *heritage*, is of two kinds, Obstructed and unobstructed. When the life of the owner of the property, or that of his sons, or other [heirs], is interposed, that [property] is [termed] obstructed; for instance, the wealth of Uncles, and the like. But where ownership accrues to sons, or other [next heirs], solely from affinity to the owner, without reference to other means of acquiring property, [the heritage] is then unobstructed, as, the wealth of a father. This is the definition of heritage.

SECTION III.

OF THE PARTITION OF HERITAGE,—[DAYU VIRHAGU.]

Definition of the Term.

1. This NARUDU declares: ¹ “ Where a division of the *paternal* estate “ is instituted by *sons*, that becomes a topic of litigation, called by the wise, “ ‘ partition of heritage.’ ” The word *sons* includes [by *Synecdoche*] grandsons, and the rest. And in the same way, by *paternal* [is intended the estate of] the grandfather and the rest. But MUDUNU: ² has the very words, ‘ of ‘ a father and the rest.’ And this definition, of ‘ partition of heritage,’ has been declared.

XC.

It may take place without the existence of property.

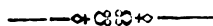
2. Even when there is a total failure of common property, a partition may also then be made, by the mere declaration, ‘ I am separate from thee.’ A partition may even be a mere mental distinction. This exposition clearly distinguishes the various qualities of this [term].

¹—Of the various readings of this text noticed by Mr. Colebrooke, in his notes to Mit. page 243, where it will be found, the Author adopts the following, ‘pitryusyu,’ ‘prukulpyate,’ ‘tud vivadu padum,’ and ‘yutru.’

²—The MUDUNU RUTNU; referred to for this reading, by Mr. Colebrooke, and formerly mentioned, page 1 note.

SECTION IV.

THE PERIODS OF PARTITION,—[VIBHAGU KALU.]



1. MUNOO: ¹ “ After the death of the Father *and* Mother, the brothers, “ being assembled, may divide among themselves the paternal [and maternal] “ estate; but they have no power over it, while their parents live [unless the “ father choose to distribute it].” By inserting the word *and*, the consummation of [both their] deaths is not required. Even thus, in the MUDUNU RUTNU and SMRITI SUNGRUHU: “ A partition of the father’s wealth may take “ place, even whilst the mother lives, for this reason, that without her husband, the mother does not from her independence also derive ownership. “ A partition of the mother’s wealth also may take place, in like manner “ while the father is alive, for, if there be issue, the lord [of the wife] is not “ lord of the wife’s wealth.” ²

Partition of the paternal estate, may take place at three periods, viz. after the father’s death.

2. This is opposed to a Text of BRUHUSPUTI: ³ “ On the demise of both “ parents, participation among brothers is allowed: and even while they are “ both living it is right, if the mother be past child bearing.” NARUDU: ⁴ “ Let sons regularly divide the wealth, when the father is dead; or when the “ mother is past child bearing, *and the Sisters are married*; or when the “ father’s *sensual passions are extinguished*.” *Sensual passions*, desire. *Extinguished*, averse. The expression, *and the Sisters are married*, must be taken collectively with [the mother’s] child bearing, and extinction of [the father’s] passions, after the simile of the Crow’s eye ⁵.

Or before it, if the mother be past child bearing.

3. GOUTUMU: ⁶ “ After the demise of the father, let sons share his

Or, with the father’s

1—Chapter 9th, v. 104. Cole. Mit. 263. Jim. Va. page 8. Digest 2d, 521.

2—See Section 10th on “ Woman’s property.”

3—Cole. Jim. Va. 23-56. Digest, 8d, 48-78.

4—Cole. Mit. 260.

5—That bird being fabled [from its singular mode of ‘ peering,’] to look two ways at once, Cole. Mit. 358 note.

6—Colebrooke, Mitakshura, 260. but I have here followed the translation given in Jimootu Vahuna, page 24, as more conformable to the doctrine of the Muyookhu, which allows only three periods of partition. The Mitakshura, on the other hand asserts four, and in support of this doctrine, divides this very Text of GOUTUMU, into three portions.

consent, at
any time.
XCI.

“ estate. Or, while he lives, and the mother be past child bearing, *if he desire*
“ partition.” From this expression, *if he desire*, partition is declared legal
also, before the mother is past child bearing, by the father’s wish alone.

Partition of
ancestral
property,
may take
place even
against the
father’s
consent.

4. BRUHUSPUTI declares partition in some cases without his wish: “ The
“ father and sons are equal sharers in houses, and lands, derived regularly
“ from Ancestors: but sons are not worthy [in their own right,] of a share in
“ wealth acquired by the father himself, when the father is unwilling:” From
which it results, that sons are worthy of a share in property, acquired by the
grandfather or other [ancestor], even though the father do not wish it.

With excep-
tion of such
as he had
recovered
by his own
exertions.

5. In the grandfather’s property also, partition in some cases depends on
the father’s pleasure, say MUNOO ¹ and VISHNOO: “ And if a father by his
“ own efforts, recover [a debt or property unjustly detained] which could
“ not be recovered before [by his father], he shall not, unless by his free
“ will, put it into parcenary with his sons, since in fact it was acquired by
“ himself.” BRUHUSPUTI ²: “ Over the grandfather’s property, which has
“ been seized [by strangers], and is recovered by the father through his own
“ ability, and over [any thing] gained by him through science, valour, or the
“ like, the father’s full dominion is ordained. He may give it away at his
“ pleasure, or he may defray his consumption with such wealth; but on
“ failure of him, the sons are pronounced entitled to equal shares.”

Over which,
as well as
over his
own acqui-
sitions, the
father has
full domi-
nion.

Circum-
stances in-
validating
the father’s
power.

6. NARUDU ³: “ A father who is afflicted with disease, or influenced by
“ wrath, or whose mind is engrossed by a beloved object, or who acts other-
“ wise than the law permits, has no power in the distribution of the estate.”
HAREETU: ⁴ “ If the father be *free from desire*, old, *perverted in mind*, or
“ long afflicted with disease, partition of his wealth [may be made].” *Free*
from desire, according to the MUDUNU RUTNU, means, without desire of par-

1—Chap. 9th, verse 200. Cole. Jim. Va. 28.—Mit. 279. Digest 3d 33, and the note there,

2—Cole. Jim. Va. 134, the reading of which, ‘ Bhogunchevu,’ is here followed Digest, 3d 32.

3—Cole. Jim. Va. 52.—Mit. 263. Digest 2d, 541.

4—This Text is found, but with a different
reading, in Cole. Jim. Va. page 19, to which, with the note there, the reader is referred.

tion. *Perverted in mind*, following practices contrary to law. The sense is, 'that partition may be made, even against the will of [such a] father.'

7. HAREETU says, that when the father is incapable, partition takes place by the concurrence of the eldest son: ¹ "But if he be decayed, remotely absent, or afflicted with disease, let the eldest son manage the affairs as he pleases." ² SHUNKHU and LIKHITU: ³ "If the father be incapable, let the eldest son manage the affairs of the family; or, with his consent, the next brother conversant with business." *The next*, the one born after him. Partition by the pleasure of one capable of the maintenance and other [care] of the family [is intended]. From this it results, that if all be so [qualified], it is [immaterial or] undetermined.

XCII.

The eldest son, in that case, manages the estate and the distribution of it; or the next after him, with his consent.

8. YANYUWULKYU: ⁴ "When the father makes a partition, let him separate his sons [from himself] at his pleasure, and either [dismiss] the eldest with the best share, or [if he choose], all may be equal sharers." A voluntary partition alone [is denoted] by the last hemistich; since the dependance of the will in the two cases mentioned, has been above declared, from the impropriety of independance; [and further] from the inconsistency [which would result in such construction] of the Text: [For then he might give] to one a Lak [of Rupees]; to another a single *Kowree*; to a third, nothing at all; which would be no [fair] exposition [of the law]. A distinction in the share of the eldest, is noticed by MUNOO: ⁵ "The portion deducted for the eldest, is a twentieth part [of the heritage], with the best of all the chattels; for the middlemost, half of that, [or a fortieth]; for the youngest, a quarter of it, [or an eightieth]:" "But, if there be no deduction, the shares must be distributed in this manner: Let the eldest have a double share,

On voluntary partition by the father, shares defined.

Partition by deduction as defined by MUNOO.

1—Cole. Jim. Va. 19. Digest 2d, 527.

2—The first hemistich, of the stanza of which this is the sequel, occurred before at Sec. 1st, para. 4.

3—Cole. Jim. Va. 19. Digest 2d, 532.

4—Cole. Mit. 258. Jim. Va. 51. Digest 2d. 529.

5—Chap. 9th, vs. 112-116-117. Digest 2d, 548-52.

“ and the next born, a share and a half, [if they clearly surpass the rest in
 “ virtue and learning ;] the younger sons must have each a share : [if all be
 “ equal in good qualities, they must all take share and share alike.”]

XCIII.

Primogeni-
 ture in case
 of twins.

9. Between twins, the birth right of that one first born is thus declared by
 MUNOO ¹ : “ The right of invoking *Indru* by the texts, called *Svubrahmunya*,
 “ depends on actual priority of birth ; and of twins also, [if any such be
 “ conceived] among [different] wives, the eldest is he, who was first actually
 “ born.” ² : “ Among twins, to him whose face [kinsmen] first see after his
 “ birth, belong [the privileges of] male offspring, [the right of performing
 “ obsequies] for his father, and [the honors of] primogeniture.”

10. However, in the PINDU SIDDHI and other Medical Books, the right
 of primogeniture is awarded to the last born [of twins]. This is opposed by
 the above [texts] in the matter at issue, because it has no foundation in the
 Sacred writings ; like as : “ Purification ensues after a month [to *Shoodrus*.”]
 However, the right of primogeniture of the last born is declared in the
 BHAGVUTU, ³ in this text and the like : “ When a double foetus is conceived,
 “ the last conception is that first brought into the world.” [But] this doctrine
 is also opposed to the above Texts [of MUNOO and DEVULU], whilst in the
 POORANUS, many practices are disclosed, contrary to the written Law. Ac-
 cording to some, the question ought to be decided by the customs of the
 Country. But what I stated at first, [in favor of the first born], is the proper
 doctrine.

Partition
 by deduc-
 tion, illegal
 in modern
 times.

11. And this partition by deduction, is not respected in the *Kuli*, [or
 present] age, for it is one of the things [expressly] set aside in the present
 age, as has been already proved by me in my SUMUYU MUYOOKHU.

1—Chap. 9th, v. 126. Digest 2d, 577.

2—This following Text is found in the Digest 2d, 578, attributed to DEVULU, and not MUNOO.

3—In the third *Skandya*, treating of the birth of Hiranyakusipoo, and Hiranyaksha, twins, Daityas, produced by
 Deetee, one of the wives of Kusyapa Rishi ; the first hemistich of the Text is omitted by our Author, pro-
 bably from its extreme grossness.

12. NARUDU allows the father a double share: ¹ "Let the father, " making a partition, reserve two shares for himself." This text relates to an only son. For in the MUDUNU RUTNU is this of SHUNKHU and LIKHITU: ² "If there be *one* son, let [the father] himself reserve two shares, and the " best of the slaves and cattle." The word *one* relates to the most excellent. By the author of the UMURU [KOSHU], 'chief,' 'other,' 'only,' are declared the synonymes of *one*. All which, according to the PARIJATU, denote a son ^{xgrv.} well qualified.

The father, in partition with an only son, takes a double share.

13. BRAHUSPUTI however declares the right to only an equal share with his sons, even if there be only one, in property acquired by the grandfather ³ : "In wealth acquired by the grandfather, whether it consist of movables or " immovables, the equal participation of father and son is ordained." YANYUWULKYU ⁴ : "For the ownership of father and son is the same, in land " which was acquired by the grandfather, or in a corrody, or in chattels " [which belonged to him]." KATYAYUNU: "When the father and the " sons even, take all that, which has been made upon the common wealth, " in equal shares, it is called a legal partition."

The only son has even a right to half the ancestral property.

And no other division of ancestral property is legal.

14. As for this Text of YANYUWULKYU: ⁵ "A legal distribution, made " by the father, among sons separated with greater or less shares, is pronounced valid;" according to MUDUNU, VINYANESHWURU ⁶ and others, it means, 'If the [distribution] made by the father be legal, it cannot be set aside.' This Text again, of NARUDU: ⁷ "For such as have been separated " by the father with equal, greater, or less, allotments of wealth, that is a " lawful distribution: for the father is lord of all," relates to the former ages.

Two texts apparently to the contrary, explained away.

15. In a case of equal partition between a father and his sons, a share

In equal partition

1—Cole. Mit. 278. Jim. Va. 35-41. Digest 3d, 43.

2—Jim. Va. 40. Digest 2d, 555, where the same gloss is mentioned nearly in the words of our Author, though it is not found in the Mudunu Parijatu, which is probably the one alluded to here.

3—Jim. Va. 42. Digest 2d, 34.

4—Cole. Mit. 277-8. Jim. Va. 25. Digest 3d, 34. Ante Sec. 1st, para. 3.

5—6—Cole. Mit. 262. Jim. Va. 50. Digest 2d, 546.

7—Digest 2d, 547. Jim. Va. 50.

between a father and his sons, the mother gets a share.

XCV.

To be made by additions to her private property previously received

Resignation of a share permitted, under certain forms to prevent future claims.

Partition after the father's death must be equal.

In this case the mother takes an equal share with the sons.

belongs also to the wife; says YANYUWULKU¹: "If he make the allotments equal, his wives, to whom no *separate property* had been given by the husband or the father in law, must be rendered partakers of like portions." If any had been given, they are only to get *half*, for he adds: ² "Or if any had been given, let him assign *the half*." *The half*; meaning, so much as, with what had been before given as *separate property*, [*Stree dhunum*] will make it equal to a son's share. But if her property be [already] more than such share, no share [belongs to her].

16. THE SAME author treats of a want of wish to participate, in the case of a son able to earn, and not desiring a share³: "The separation of one who is able to support himself, and is not desirous of participation, may be completed by giving him some trifle." According to the MITAKSHURA it means that: 'Any thing whatever may be given, for the sake of preventing the desire being entertained by his sons, of receiving [a share of] the heritage.'

17. An equal partition, after the death of the father, is declared in another SMRITI⁴: "Let sons divide equally both the effects and the debts, after [the demise of] both parents." HAREETU:⁵ "When the father is dead, the partition of the inheritance should be made equally."

18. YANYUWULKYU:⁶ "Of heirs dividing after the death of the father, let the mother also take an equal share." VISHNOO⁷: "Mothers receive allotments according to the shares of sons." In another SMRITI [it is said]: "A mother, if she be dowerless, shall in a partition by sons, take an equal share." The meaning is, that if she have dower⁸, she shall

1—Cole. Mit. 261. Jim. Va. 63. Digest 3d, 11. Reports 1st, 31.

2—Cole. Mit. 261-475.

3—Cole. Mit. 262. Jim. Va. 62. Digest 3d, 65. Reports 2d, 8-665. The subsequent quotation, as of Viyaneshwara's comment on this Text, seems imperfect. Cole. on Obligations, page 25, but with regard to debts, see post. Chap. 6th, sec. 4th.

4—Yanyuwulkyu Mit. 263. Jim. Va. 53. Digest 3d, 78. Cole. on Obfig. page 138.

5—Jim. Va. page 61. where the word 'father' is omitted.

6—Cole. Mit. 285. Reports 2d, 454.

7—Jim. Va. 64. Digest 3d, 15. 8—DHUNU, wealth, taken as before in that sense, of separate property, para. 15.

take only as much as, with that dower, will make her an equal sharer with her sons. But no share [belongs to her], if her property be more than such share.

19. VYASU ¹ declares the [right to] share, even of a step mother, and the paternal grandmother: "Even childless wives of the father are pronounced equal sharers; and so are *all* the paternal grandmothers: they are declared equal to mothers." From this [word] *all*, the step grandmothers also are to be included.

As do the step mothers, and paternal grandmothers

XCVI.

20. YANYUWULKYU declares the mode of partition among the sons of different brothers ²: "Among grandsons by different fathers, the allotment of shares is according to the fathers." It means, that if there be one son of one, two sons of a second, three of a third [or the like], their shares will be solely according to the number of the fathers, and not in the number of the sharers themselves.

Partition among sons of different brothers, is according to their fathers.

21. KATYAYUNU: ³ "Should a *younger son* die before partition, his share shall be allotted [by the elder brother] to his son, provided he had received no fortune from his grandfather." "That son's son shall receive his father's share from his uncle, or from his [uncle's] son; and the same [proportionate] share shall be allotted to all the brothers according to law" "Or [if that grandson be also dead] his son takes the share; beyond him succession stops." The *younger son* [Unooju] denotes also that the eldest [is bound to portion off his brother's son]. *Stops*, at the great grandson.

Brother's sons also share with their uncles.

Or even their sons' sons, but no farther.

22. We must thus understand it: 'The son of the great grandson, or the rest will not, on the death of the father ⁴, [*grandfather, and great grandfather, without interval after the death of the great great*] grandfather,

Explanation of the above restriction.

1—Jim. Va. 64. Digest 3d, 12. Reports 2d, 452.

2—Cole. Mit. 276. Jim. Va. 60, Digest 2d, 6.

3—Digest 3d, 7. Both the readings noted there are thrown out by the Author, who reads "Unooju," instead of "nije."

4—This is an apparent interpolation of the words following between the brackets, in Italics, as they are found only in the Beuarea Copy.

‘ obtain his wealth, being of another [line], so long as his son, or other [heirs] are alive. In default of son, grandson, [and *great grandson*] in the general [family] only, he also will take [the succession].’

Referring it to a reunited family only.

23. And this does not refer to an undivided family, but to a reunited one. For it is said by DEVULU ¹ : “ Partition of heritage among undivided par-

ners, and a second partition among divided relatives living together [after re-union], shall extend to the fourth in descent: this is a settled rule.”

XCVII.

“ And: ² “ Be it debt, or a written contract; or a house, or arable land, descended from his grandfather, he shall take his due share of it, when he comes, even though he had been very long in a foreign country.” “ If a man leave the common family and reside in another province, his share must undoubtedly be given to his male descendants when they appear.” It means: ‘ between the great great grandfather, and his sons, separated when in a state of union, and [afterwards] re-united.’

Removal of the limitation in case of residence abroad.

24. This refers to those fixed in the same district; because, where they reside in different districts, it will descend even to the fifth, as is declared by BRUHUSPUTI, in treating of residence in other lands: ³ “ Be he the third person, or the fifth, or even the seventh, [that is in the second, or fourth, or even in the sixth degree], he shall receive the share that gradually descends to him, on full proof of his birth and family name.”

Partition is according to the mothers, in case their sons are of equal number.

25. BRUHUSPUTI ⁴ declares a partition in some cases according to the mothers: “ If there be many [sons] sprung from one [father], alike in number, and in class, but born of rival mothers, partition must be made by them according to law, by the allotment of shares to the mothers.” VYASU ⁵ : “ If there be many sons of one man, by different mothers, but equal in number, and alike by class, a distribution among the mothers is approved.”

1—Digest 3d, 10.

2—Digest 3d, 441, Jim. Va. 140. in both, the text is assigned to BRUHUSPUTI.

3—Digest 3d, 441. Jim. Va. 140

4—Jim. Va. 57. Digest 2d, 575.

5—Jim. Va. 57,

26. BRUHUSPUTI¹ gives this opposite example: "Among brothers, who are equal in class, but vary in regard to the number [of sons produced by each mother], the shares of the heritage are allotted to the males [not to their mothers]."

If not, then according to the number of the sons themselves.

27. YANYUWULKYU² states a partition among sons of different classes: "The sons of a *Brahmun*, in the several tribes, have four shares, or three, or two, or one; the children of a *Kshutriyu* have three portions, or two, or one; and those of a *Vaishyu* take two parts, or one." The sons of a *Brahmun*, that is, borne to him by a *Brahmunee*, a *Kshutriya*, a *Vaishya*, and a *Shoodra*. Those of a *Kshutriyu*, those by a *Kshutriya*, a *Vaishya*, and a *Shoodra*. Those of a *Vaishyu*, those borne to him by a *Vaishya* and a *Shoodra*.

Partition among sons of different classes.

XCVIII.

28. BRUHUSPUTI:³ "Land, obtained by acceptance of donation, must not be given to the son of a *Kshutriya*, or other wife of inferior tribe: even though his father give it him, the son of the *Brahmunee* may resume it when his father is dead." DEVULU:⁴ "The son begotten on a *Shoodree* woman by any man of a twice-born class, is not entitled to a share of land: but one begotten on her, being of equal class, shall take all the property [whether land or chattels]: thus is the law settled." Of land, acquired by purchase, and the other modes also. Yet he does obtain a share of the [moveable] wealth.

Land is confined to the son borne by the wife of equal class alone.

29. But the son by a *Shoodra* woman, not legally married, does not obtain a share, even of the moveable property. And so MUNOO:⁵ "The son of a *Brahmun*, a *Kshutriyu*, or a *Vaishyu*, by a woman of the servile class, shall inherit no part of the estate [unless he be virtuous; nor jointly with other sons, unless his mother was lawfully married:] whatever his father may give him, let that be his own."

Illegitimate sons do not inherit even moveable wealth.

1—Digest 2d, 576. 2—Cole. Mit. 291. Digest 3d, 114. 3—Cole. Mit. 292. Jim. Va. 147, Digest 3d, 130

4—This is cited in other books as a Text of BRUHUSPUTI: Jim. Va. 148. Mit. 292. Digest 3d, 133

5—Chap. 9th, 155. Mit. 293. Jim. Va. 149, Digest 3d, 136.

But must
be maintain-
ed.

30. BRUHUSPUTI declares this distinction after the father's death: ¹ "The
// virtuous and obedient son, borne by a *Shoodra* woman to a man who has no
" other offspring, should obtain a maintenance; and let kinsmen take the
" residue of the estate." GOUTUMU ²: "A son by a *Shoodra* woman, born
" unto a man who leaves no [legitimate] offspring, shall, if he be strictly
" obedient like a pupil, receive a *provision for his maintenance.*" A *provi-*
sion, for his maintenance; or, 'as a means of livelihood.'

Shares of
sons begot-
ten in in-
verse order.

31. THE SAME author ³: "*Sons termed Prutilomu* [shall have an allot-
" ment] similar to that of the son produced by a woman of the servile class."
Sons termed Prutilomu, meaning, those produced by a woman, higher than
the begetter, with respect to class.

Illegitimate
sons of *Shoo-*
dras take a
XCIX.
share by the
father's
choice; and
may claim
half a share
after his
death.

32. YANYUWULKYU ⁴ states a distinction with regard to a son begot-
ten by a *Shoodru* on a woman not married to him: "Even a son begotten by
" a *Shoodru* on a female slave, may take a share, by the father's choice. But
" if the father be dead, the brethren should make him partaker of the moiety
" of a share." Choice, the pleasure of the father. From specifying *by a*
Shoodru, it is clear, that a son begotten by a twice-born man on a female
slave does not obtain a share, even by the father's choice: Neither after the
death of the father, will he get the half; nor, in the absence of sons or other
[heirs], will he get the whole. This is the argument of the MUPUNU RUTNU,
and others.

A son born
after a par-
tition by the
father, alone
succeeds to
him.

33. A distinction is thus declared respecting a son born after partition:
" One born [to a man] separated [from his sons] will alone take the fa-
" ther's [wealth]." BRUHUSPUTI; ⁵ "All the wealth, which is acquired
" by the father himself, who has made a partition with his sons, goes to
" the son begotten by him after the partition: those, born before it, are de-
" clared to have no right." ⁶: "As in the wealth, so in the debts likewise;

1—Jim. Va. 149. Digest 3d, 139.

2—Digest 3d, 139.

3—Digest 3d, 149.

4—Cole. Mit. 222. Jim. Va. 151, Digest 3d, 143.

5—Cole. Mit. 281. Jim. Va. 157. 8. Digest 3d, 49. 435.

6—Jim. Va. 138.

“ and in gifts, pledges, and purchases ” “ They have no claims on each other “ except for acts of mourning and libations of water.” If there be nothing but debts, then that [son] is not even bound to pay those debts, without receiving a share from those formerly separated ; for, as will afterwards be shewn, ¹ “ He who takes the estate, must be made to pay the debts of it.”

but is not bound to pay his debts under certain circumstances.

34. But if any one of them have re-united [with the father], a partition with that [son born after partition] shall be made. As is declared by Munnoo: ² “ A son born after a division, shall alone take the paternal wealth : “ or he shall participate with such of the brethren as are reunited with the “ father.”

But reunion with the father gives a right to share with that son.

35. YANYUWULKYU ³ states a distinction, at a partition after the father's death, with respect to a son borne immediately afterwards, by a mother, or step-mother, or brother's wife, whose pregnancy was uncertain : “ When the “ sons have been separated, one who is [afterwards] born, of a woman equal “ in class, shares the distribution.” The partition is to be thus effected : Something is to be contributed by all the brothers, or others [who had previously shared], each something out of his own share, until the [posthumous son's] share is equal to their own. VISHNOO : ⁴ “ Sons with whom the father “ has made a partition, should give a share to the son born after the “ distribution.”

Distinction with regard to posthumous sons' shares.

C.

36. And this we must understand as allowing for [subsequent] expenses and income. For if it be so, then, says THE SAME AUTHOR ⁵ : “ His allotment “ must absolutely be made, *out of the visible estate*, corrected for income and “ expenditure.” *Out of the visible estate*, out of the wealth actually forth coming.

Deduction to be first made for expenses and income.

37. At the time of a partition among brothers, this distinction is noted

Partition not to be

1—Post chap. 5th, Section 4th, para : 16.

2—Chapter 9th, v. 216. Cole. Mit. 281. Jim. Va. 136.

Digest 3d, 50. The translation of the MITAKSHURA is followed.

3—Cole. Mit. 280, Jim. Va. 138. Digest 3d, 436.

4—Jim. Va. 138. Digest 3d, 51.

5—YANYUWULKYU [in continuation of his text partially quoted above]. Cole. Mit. 282. Jim. Va. 138. Digest 3d 436.

made till delivery of pregnant women.

by VUSISHTHU ¹: " Partition of heritage [takes place] among brothers, " [*having waited*] till after the delivery of such of the women as are childless " [but pregnant]." *Having waited*, is omitted [and supplied].

Initiation of younger brothers,

38. A further distinction in a partition after death of the father, is stated by BRUHSPUTI: ² " For younger *brothers*, whose investiture and other " ceremonies have not been performed, their elder brothers shall perform " them, out of the collected wealth of the father." The term *Yuveeyusuh*, [is substituted for *Yuveeyansuh*, with the freedom exercised by ancient sages] after the manner of the VEDUS, by omitting the regular inflection [*Noom*] and the prolongation of the vowel [*Deerghu*].

and of sisters, to be made by the eldest brother out of the common estate.

39. The mention of *brothers*, brings in the sisters also. Even so THE SAME author: " And those unmarried daughters who are as yet uninitiated, " must be initiated, by their eldest brother, even out of the father's wealth, " according to the [usual] rite."

CI.

Amount to be allowed for marriage of daughters.

40. YANYUWULKYU ³ [premising]: " Uninitiated brothers should be " initiated by those, for whom the ceremonies have been already completed:" states a distinction in regard to initiation of sisters: " But sisters should be " disposed of in marriage, giving them as an allotment, the fourth part of a " brother's own share;" meaning, that a fourth part of such share as would be allotted to a son of such class as the sister [happens to be,] being given to each sister [according to her rank], they are to be initiated. ⁴

Sons, principal and secondary,

41. For the sake of consistency in deciding upon taking the heritage YANYUWULKYU ⁵ gives this [detailed] description of sons principal and secondary: " 1st, The *legitimate son*, [*Ourusu*] is one procreated on the lawful wedded wife: 2d, Equal to him is the *son of an appointed daughter*: [*pootrika*] 3d,

1—Cole. Mit. 283, Jim. Va. 30.

2—Digest 3d, 101. Where the subsequent explanation is noticed.

3—Cole. Mit. 285-6 Jim Va. 65. Digest 3d, 96. Reports 1st, 419.

4—Or married, since marriage is the only one of the rites of initiation [*sanskara*] to which a female is entitled. See note to page 289 of the Mit.

5—Cole. Mit. 301. Digest 3d, 160. et al.

“ The *son of the wife*, [*kshetruju*] is one begotten on a wife by a kinsman of
 “ her husband, or by some other relative: 4th, One secretly produced in
 “ the house, is a son of hidden origin: 5th, A damsel's child, is one born
 “ of an unmarried woman: he is considered as son of his maternal grand
 “ sire: 6th, A child begotten on a woman whose [first] marriage had not
 “ been consummated, or on one who had been deflowered [before marriage]
 “ is called the *son of a twice-married woman*. 7th, He whom his father or
 “ his mother give for adoption, shall be considered as a *son given*: [*duttuku*]
 “ 8th, A son bought, is one who was sold by his father and mother. 9th,
 “ A son made, is one adopted by the man himself. 10th, One who gives
 “ himself, is self-given. 11th, A child, accepted while yet in the womb, is
 “ one received with a bride. 12th, He who is taken for adoption, having
 “ been forsaken by his parents, is a deserted son.”

42. The *legitimate son*, born of a woman of equal class, and lawfully married, is the principal, [Of those secondary].

43. The *son of an appointed daughter*, is of two kinds: Of which the first is thus explained by VUSISHTHU: ¹ “ This damsel, who has no brother,
 “ I will give unto thee, decked with ornaments: the son, who may be born
 “ of her, shall be my son.” And the other [kind] is thus noticed by the
 same: ² “ The appointed daughter is considered to be the third [descrip-
 “ tion of sons].” In this case, the father's obsequies and the like, are to be
 performed by the [appointed] daughter alone. civ.

44. The *son of the wife*, is one begotten on the wife of a brother or other
 [relative dying] without male issue, under the orders of the eldest brother,
 by [his] younger brother, or other [relative as the case may be] being of the
 same lineage. 3d,

45. The *son of a twice-married woman*, is he who is produced of the 6th,

Of sons secondary,
 the author
 notices only
 the 2d.

1—Cole. Mit. 303. Jim. Va. 132. Digest 3d, 171

2—Cole. Mit. 304.

and second marriage of a woman, whether a virgin unenjoyed by her first husband, or whose first marriage had been consummated.

7th, 46. Here we must mark, that with the exception of the *given son*, [all the other ten] secondary sons are set aside in the *Kuli* or present age, for we read, in the prohibitions of it: "The acceptance likewise of affiliations, " other than those of a legitimate and *adopted son*." ¹

SECTION V.

ON ADOPTION,—[*DUTTUKU*].

—o 3 3 o—

Qualifications for an adoption.

1. MUNOO says ²: "*He is called a son given [Duttrimu], whom his father or mother affectionately gives as a son, being alike [by class], and in a time of distress; confirming the gift with water.*" According to MUDUNU: 'The disjunctive 'or, means, that if the mother be not present, the father alone may give him away; and if the father be dead, the mother the same; but if both be alive, then even both.' From his using the word *in distress*, (it seems that) if *not* in distress, he must not be given.

The want of them affects the gift as well as the giver.

2. VINYANESHWURU ³ says, 'This prohibition regards the giver only (and not the gift); as affecting the person, and not the religious ceremony, [*krutvarthu*]' ⁴ But it is not so; for the certainty of the religious ceremony is ascertained from the invisible [or prospective] nature of this [rule regarding gift of a son] in the text. Or, if indeed a visible [existing] object [be allowed for obviating the exception, as to distress], still, by reason of the absolute necessity for the object of the rule being prospective in regard to the theme in hand, in going beyond it, the establishing of the invisible [prospective] benefit produced by the ceremony, and not before existing, [is brought about].

¹—See "General note" to the translation of MUNOO: page 365. text, number 8.

²—Chapter 9th, 168. Mit. 309, Digest 3d, 258. Reports 1st, 193.

³—Cole. Mit. 309.

⁴—Cole. Mit. 249.

SOME however say, 'To the word distress, the sense of a prohibition does not apply, because of the want of that quality of the *Purisunkhya* rules, [which would shew] non existence of distress, by the absurdity they would involve, among other things, of quitting the straight forward sense of the text : and that we require only to suppose some sign or motive of distress ; not that, when distress is the inciting motive, by not giving the son the crime of [not relieving] distress [will be incurred]; because the mere connexion of name and person in this Text is to be understood, and there is, in [declaring] the necessity of distress, a want of the actual completion of the gift. CHIL.

3. Moreover, the assertion made by him [VINYANESHWURU] in his chapter on marriage ¹ that : ' In transgressing the prohibition against [espousing] sickly brides, and the like, it is merely an opposition to a manifest object, [or rule], whilst the state of a lawful wife is superinduced notwithstanding,' is by the above argument over-ruled.

4. *Alike*, according to MEDHATITHI, means, ' not by tribe, but by qualities suitable to the family : accordingly, a *Kshutriyu*, or a person of any other inferior class, may be the given son, [*Duttuku*] of a *Brahmunu*.' ² But KOOLLOOKU BHUTTU says, it means 'equal in class,' and this is correct; for YANYUWULKYU, after enumerating the twelve sorts of sons, in this way : "The legitimate son is one procreated on the lawful wedded wife : " &c., says : ³ " This law is propounded by me in regard to sons *equal by class*." And this I will make clear by two text of SHOUNUKU, to be cited hereafter [para. 9]. VINYANESHWURU also declares the same : ⁴ " By the eldest son, as soon as born, a man *becomes the father of male issue* ; " ' for the eldest chiefly fulfils the office of a son, and is therefore not to be given.' And this prohibition also regards the giver only, and not the taker, according to the same authority. ⁵

A disputed term examined, and defined.

1—*Acharadhyaya*, *vivahu prukurnu*, leaf 6 page 2d,

2—Cole. Mit. 309 note, where our Author is

noticed—Dutt. Mim. 32, Dutt. Chund. 159. Reports 1st, 193.

3—Mit. 320. Jim. Va. 151. Digest 3d, 275

4—Mit. 310 quoting MUNOO chapter 9th, 106, the first hemistich here, and the last in the next paragraph.

5—It is not however very clear that such is the intent of the MITAKSMURA.

Prohibition
proved to
apply, both
to the giver
and receiver.
CIV.

5. This prohibition might indeed apply to the giver alone, provided this text of Munoo contained a prohibition of the gift of an eldest son. But it does not, for there is a want of proof [in the affirmative], and because the expression, *becomes the father of male issue*, is a declaration of parentage alone, and moreover that even, as regards its applicability to the discharge of debt alone. Accordingly, the last hemistich exactly agrees with this interpretation: "And is exonerated from debt to his ancestors; such a son therefore "is entitled to take *the whole*." ¹ *The whole*, the wealth.

Analysis of
the original
Text of
Munoo, to
prove.

6. And a male child alone becomes adopted, not a female. "He [*Suh*] "is called a son given." From the pronoun *he*, entered in the text, [being masculine, and] referring to connexion between name and person, we must understand one, 'where a mother and father are agents; where affection, water, and proper qualifications exist; with necessity as a reason; and where the act of gift, equality of class, and male sex [are united], in the same way as, from the [masculine] pronoun *him*, in the holy text: "Let a *Brahmun* of eight years be initiated, and let *him* [*tum*] be instructed," we infer, 'that the age is eight years; the order, that of a *Brahmun*; and the sex, male; his initiation with the string completed, &c.

that a female may
not be adopted.

7. From this results the refutation of what some persons have held, viz: 'That the terminations *ktre*, and *mum* being common to all genders; that the word *Duttrimu* ending in *mum*, therefore, since there is no distinction between it, and the act by which a gift is concluded, it may be applied in like manner even to a girl, when given, whether to her husband or to any other.'

CEREMONY
OF ADOPTION.

8. SHOUNUKU thus declares the mode of adopting a son: ² "I, SHOUNUKU, "now declare the best adoption: One having no male issue, or one whose "male issue has died, having fasted for a son; having given two pieces of

1—Munoo chapter 9th. v. 106, Jim. Va. 16-170.

2—Dutt. Mim. 67. Dutt. Chaud. 167. Reports 2d, 35.

The *Mudheopurku* is a prepared food, of honey, liquid butter, and curds.

“ cloth, a pair of earrings, a turban, a ring for the forefinger, to a priest reli-
 “ giously disposed, a follower of VISHNOO, and thoroughly read in the VEDUS :
 “ having venerated the king and virtuous *Brahmunus*, by a *Mudhoopurku* :¹
 “ Both a bunch of sixty four stems entirely of the *Koosu* grass, and fuel of the
 “ *pulashu* tree also : having collected these articles, having earnestly invited ^{cv.}
 “ kinsmen and relations ; having entertained the kinsmen with food ; and
 “ especially *Brahmunus* : having performed the rites, commencing with that of
 “ placing the consecrated fire, and ending with that of purifying the liquid
 “ butter : having advanced before the giver, let him cause to be asked thus,
 “ ‘ give the boy.’ The giver, being capable of the gift, [should give] to him
 “ with the recitation of the five prayers, the initial words of the first of which
 “ are, *Ye yujnyenu*, &c. Having taken him by both hands, with the reci-
 “ tation of the prayer, commencing, “ *Devusyu twu*, &c ;” having inaudibly
 “ repeated the mystical invocation, *Ungad unge*, &c. “ having kissed the
 “ forehead of the child : having adorned with clothes, and so forth, the
 “ boy bearing the reflection of a son : Accompanied with dancing, songs, and
 “ benedictory words, having seated him in the middle of the house : hav-
 “ ing according to ordinance, offered a burnt offering of milk and curds, [to
 “ each incantation,] with recitation of the mystical invocation, ‘ *Yustwa*
 “ *kridu* : the portion of the RIK VEDU commencing, ‘ *toobhyum ugne* :’ and
 “ the five prayers, of which the initial words of the first are *Somodudut*, &c.”
 “ [let him close the ceremony².]

9. ³ “ The adoption of a son, by any *Brahmun*, must be made from
 “ amongst *supindus*, or kinsmen connected by an oblation of food ; or on
 “ failure of these, an *Usupindu*, or one not so connected, may be adopted :

What per-
 sons are ca-
 pable of be-
 ing adop-
 ted.

1—Dutt Mim. 88-89-91—Dutt Chand. 168-69.

2—This is added to render the passage intelligible. In the Dutt Mim. the sense breaks off here in a singular manner, being continued in other texts ; our author leaves it equally incomplete.

3—Dutt Mim. 26, Dutt Chand 118. Reports 1st, 194.

“ otherwise, let him not adopt.” ¹ “ Of *Kshutriyus*, in their own class
 “ positively : and [on default of a *Supindu* kinsman] even in the general fa-
 “ mily, following the same primitive spiritual guide [*Gooroo*] : Of *Vaishyus*
 “ from amongst those of the *Vaishyu* class [*Vaisyujateshoo*] ; of *Shoodrus*
 “ from amongst those of the *Shoodru* class. Of all, and the tribes likewise,
 “ in [their own] classes only : and not otherwise. But a daughters son, and
 “ a sister’s son are affiliated by *Shoodrus*” ² : “ By no man, having an only
 “ son [*eku pootru*] is the gift of a son to be ever made. By a man having
 cvi. “ several sons [*buhoo pootru*] such gift is to be made, on account of difficulty
 “ [*pruyutnutus*].” ³ : “ Let the best of the regenerate [the *Brahmun*] to the
 “ extent of his ability, bestow a gratuity on the officiating priest. A king
 “ [*Kshutriyu*, the produce of] half even of his dominion : next in order, a
 “ *Vaishyu* three hundred pieces ; a *Shoodru*, the whole even of his property :
 “ if indigent, to the extent of his means.” *Bearing the reflection*, equal to.
 [or, like].

Argument
upon the
daughter's
and sister's
son for
Shoodrus.

10. *A daughter's son and a sister's son* : Now, as in the instance of the stick,
 in the formula : “ [The sacrificer, *yujman*] delivers *the stick* to [the *Brahmun*,
 “ who personates] *Maitra Vuroonu* :” though the stick [really] be the object
 required, from the necessity of its previous existence, still, by the use of the
 fourth case [to], *Maitra Vuroonu* is alone denoted as the object, as is the
 most fit, from his act of uttering the summons in the formula : “ The holder
 “ of the stick [he who personates *Maitra Vuroonu*] then utters the
 “ invocations [to the deities, for their presence in the sacrifice].” Even so,
 in this place, since the state of non release from debt [results from want
 of a son], and because the sixth case [of *Shoodrus*, in the text] has the sense
 of the fourth [to or for], therefore both, the daughter’s and the sister’s son
 alone, are to be admitted *for Shoodrus*, as the means [of relieving the
 father from debt]. So, by the propriety of only these two, the purport of the

1—Dutt Mim, 50. Dutt Chund, 160.

3—Dutt, Mim, 92-3, Dutt, Chund, 170.

2—Dutt, Mim, 62 Dutt, Chund, 166, where it is translated,
 “ is to be anxiously made.”

restriction of the rule is declared: thus, "The daughter's son and the sister's son alone are for *Shoodrus*." But if the impossibility of it for *Shoodrus* [be urged], by reason of the impropriety of the restriction, [I answer] they are both exhibited by the texts as the objects for *Shoodrus* alone; since it would be absurd to make the restriction apply to the agent, [*Purisunkhya*] in respect to *Brahmins* and the rest.

11. Therefore the daughter's son, and sister's son even, are the most proper for *Shoodrus*: In default of them, another also [may be adopted], if of similar class, as declared by the same author [para. 9]: "Of *Shoodrus* from amongst those of the *Shoodru* class." This word, *class*, is not [necessarily] implied, by its connexion with 'daughter's son and sister's son,' alone, for there is no [necessary] mutual connexion between the states, of 'daughter's son, sister's son, and common cast:'. And there is a risk of our [thereby] making an absurdity of parallel passages of the same author. This is fully explained by my father in his *DVAITU NIRNAYU*, and the same is the rule [*Acharu*] ordained by sages.

Conclusion drawn that they are the most proper for *Shoodrus*.

CVII.

12. And the assertion of their right [to adopt] being demonstrable in the very same way, as [the argument upon] the word *Nishadusthu puti*¹, the assertion in the *SHOODDHI VIVEKU*, that 'there is a want of title for *Shoodrus* to celebrate the acceptance of a son with a *Homu* authenticated by *Veduku Muntrus*,' is hereby refuted.

Assertion to the contrary, in the *Shooddhi viveku*, controverted.

13. The *Homu* however, being accompanied with *Muntrus*, must be celebrated by them through the instrumentality of a *Brahmun*, in conformity to the text of *PURASHURU*: "When fasts, vows, burnt sacrifices, ablution at a *Teerthu*, silent meditation, or prayer, and the like, are performed by a

Ceremony, for *Shoodrus*, to be by means of a *Brahmun*.

1—[The lord of those residing among the *Nishadus*, who might be of any cast, and therefore entitled to adopt; but when read *Nishadu sthuputi*, 'the Lord of the *Nishadus*,' that is, one of that cast, he, as being lower than a *Shoodru*, could not adopt, in the proper form.]

" *Brahmunu* [on the part of another] the benefit of them accrues to him who caused their performance." And the very same is declared, both by SMARTHU and HURINATHU.

Another text of Purashuru explained.

14. However, what [in seeming contradiction] PURASHURU himself adds: " The *Brahmunu* who, for the sake of *Dukshuna*, performs *Homa* with sacrificial materials furnished by a *Shoodru*, shall himself become a *Shoodru*, and the *Shoodru* shall become a *Brahmun*," means, according to MUDUNU, that the whole benefit of the act accrues to the *Shoodru*, whilst the crime fully attaches to the *Brahmunu*.

One law, for women and Shoodrus.

15. The right also pertains to women, equally as to *Shoodrus*, by reason of the text: " Women and *Shoodrus*, are governed by the same law."

The proper objects for adoption pointed out

16. VUSISHTHU ¹: " Man, produced from virile seed and uterine blood, proceeds from his father and his mother, as an effect from its cause. Therefore his father and mother have power to give, to sell, or to abandon, their son. But let no man give, or accept, an only son: for he is [destined] to continue the line of his ancestors. Let not a woman give or accept a son, unless with the assent of her husband." ²: " A person, being about to adopt a son, should take an *unremote kinsman*, or the near relation of a kinsman, having convened his kindred, and announced his intention to the king, and having offered a burnt offering, with recitation of the prayers denominated '*Vyahriti*' in the middle of his dwelling. But, if a doubt arise, let him set apart, like a *Shoodru*, one whose kindred are *remote*; for it is declared [in the *Vedus*]: ' Many are saved by one.' When a son has been adopted, if a legitimate son be afterwards born, the given son shares a fourth part."

CVIII.

Deduction

17. Therefore, if there must be an order from the husband, it is for a

¹—Dutt. Mim. 93. Mit. 308-10-11-15 and notes. Digest 3d, 242. Reports 1st, 190.

²—Dutt. Chund. 169 takes up the text here. Reports 2d, 450.

³—Reports 1st, 197, 2d, 450. Nyati is sometimes interpreted "Cast," but improperly. It means Gentile kindred only. See Mit. 308, note, where our Author's opinion is noticed on this point.

married woman only, as above shewn; but, for a widow, even without it [adoption] may be made, with the permission of her father, or, on failure of him, of the relations [*Nyati*], under this precept: "Let a female be taken care of, by her father while a child, by her husband when married, and by her sons, in her old age. If none of these exist, let her other relations [*Nyati*] take care of her. A woman is never fit for independence." This has been declared by YANYUWULKYU ¹ only with reference to difference of age, and the circumstances of a woman, being under the power of her husband. In case of his being dead, or [unable] from old age, or other [disqualification], or from helplessness, then [she is] indeed under the power of her sons or other relatives.

in favor of
Widows'
power to
adopt.

18. By KATYAYUNU also it has been said ² "If a woman, without the orders of her father, husband, or son, should perform *obsequies*, such obsequies are of doubtful validity." What is here said of the orders of her father, husband, &c. relates only to the difference of age. *Obsequies* here means, rites performed for the other world; wherefore, at whatever age a married woman may [require to] receive the command of her husband, that very command is in the case of a widow not required, since the command of any other person, not here mentioned, is no where declared requisite. Therefore the right of adoption, even without the order of her [late] husband, does pertain to a widow.

A similar
text of
Katyayunu
explained,
only to re-
late to mar-
ried women

CIX.

19. The *unremote kinsman*, means, in each case, the *supīndu* nearest [to the adopter]; among whom again, the nearest of all is the brother's son; for: "If among several brothers of the whole blood, one of them have a son born, MUNOO ³ pronounces them all fathers of a male child by means of that son." And the MITAKSHURA ⁴ has the same. And this must be the proper motive of that precept; for it is impossible there can be any

Explanation
of Vvaish-
thu's text
in favor of
the bro-
ther's son
first.

1—Digest 2d, 381. Reports 2d, 450.

2—Reports 1st, 195. 2nd 457.

3—4—Chapter 9th, 182. Mit. 320. Jim. Va. 200. Digest 3d, 256. Reports 2d, 86. Dutt, Mim. 33. Dutt.

Chund. 161.

other. The *remote* kinsman, means 'one of another cast.' And my father "has said that: "A married man, who has even had a son, born, may become an adopted son." This also is reasonable, for it is not in opposition [to other maxims].¹

A text of the Kalika Pooranu, cited and explained.

20. As for this text of the KALIKA POORANU²: "O Lord of the earth, "a son, having been initiated under the family name of his father, *unto the ceremony of tonsure inclusive*, does not become the son of another man " [*unyustus*]. The ceremony of tonsure and of investiture³ being indeed "performed, under his own family name, sons given, and the rest may be "considered as issue: else they are termed slaves. After their fifth year, O "king, sons given, and the rest are not sons. [But] having taken a boy "five years old, the adopter should first perform the sacrifice for male issue." It relates to *Usugotrus* only. *Unto the ceremony of tonsure inclusive*; The particle, *ang*, here is inceptive, used for the sake of intirely including all such cases; for if it be meant as a limit conclusive, it will have the objection of being in opposition *to the ceremonies of tonsure and investiture* [specified in the text.] But such reliance is not to be placed on this last passage, because it is not to be found in two or three copies of the KALI-

CX.

KA POORANU.

'Son given,' of two kinds: 'SIMPLE ADOPTED,' and 'SON OF TWO FATHERS.'

21. The son given is of two sorts; first, simple; second, son of two fathers. (*dwiyamooshyayunu*) *The first*, is one bestowed without any special compact; the last, is one given under an agreement to this effect, 'he shall belong to us both.'⁴ Here *the first* will perform the funeral ceremony, and the other rites for the adopter only, as may thus [be demonstrated]: In the desire of accomplishing the acceptance of a son, by the term 'son' being in the second person, in the phrase, "being about to adopt a

1—Reports 1st, 196. 2—Dutt. Mim. 68. Dutt. Chund. 175. Mit. 310 and Notes quoting our Author's opinion.

Digest 3d, 148-9. Reports 1st, 195.

3—The reading of the Muiyookh is purposely more

explicit here than in the other works, which read 'tonsure and other rites.'

4—Mit. 308 note, quoting this passage.

son" [para. 16] and the like, detailing the rules for the ceremony, the production of a son is declared. And not that the adopter can possibly imagine, 'his filial relationship is derived from my capacity of begetting.' Therefore, from the word 'son,' after having instanced the whole duties of a son, we must admit the production of one, as far as requisite, and not previously existing. Hence, in the family of the acceptor, the condition may [in this way] be brought about: From which result the acts suitable to the different relations, of son, father, and the rest. Even as is declared by MUNOO: ¹ "A given son must never claim the family and estate of his natural father: the funeral oblation follows the family and estate, but of him who has given away his son, the obsequies fail."

22. *Follows the family and estate*, goes after the family and estate, the latter expression corresponding generally with the term "goes along with." The *given son*, the simple adopted; since, in the case of a *Dwyamooshyayunu*, the [double] obligation of family connexion and the like, will be hereafter declared. The *funeral oblation*, according to MEDHATITHI, KOOLLOOKU BHUTTU, and others, means the funeral ceremony, and other *Shraddhus*. According to other authors again, the *funeral oblation*, means *supindu* connexion; and *obsequies*, the funeral and other *shraddhus*. The correct interpretation is this: As by the passage: ² "He, who has begotten a son, and whose hair is [still] black, may maintain a sacred fire," the difference as to his age and condition is exemplified, and again, the difference of place, by the passage: "He measures out the inner portion, and the outer portion of the altar;" even so, in this place, having merely exemplified the acts connected with the obligation of the funeral oblation for the natural father and the rest, by the terms, 'family,' 'estate,' 'funeral oblation,' and 'obsequies,' the cessation of them is declared.

Explanation
of Mu-
noo's text.

CXI.

¹—Chapter 9th. 142. Mit. 316. Digest 3d, 147. Dutt. Mim. 105. Dutt. Chand. 191.

²—Mit. page 263 note.

Reports 2nd 662

U

23. From this also results, the establishment of the cessation of family connexion with the father's whole brother, and the rest. Therefore also, even the son begotten by the simple adopted son, shall perform [his father's] *supindee kurun*, *parvunu* obsequies, and the rest, in conjunction even with the [original] adopter. Even so, his son also.

A text of KATYAYU-NU held to refer to the 'son of two fathers.'

24. However, what KATYAYUNU, opening the discussion of the 'son of two fathers,' by this text: "Now, when the family connexion of sons, " either adopted, purchased, or son of an appointed daughter, remains " unsettled, through their acceptance by another, *they become sons of two fathers*," and the like, says: "If there be no offspring of these adopters by " their own wives, they [the secondary sons,] take the estate, and give the " funeral oblations to three ancestors; if there be no [offspring], to either [the " giver or receiver], they will give the oblation for both. Having separately " considered both *in one Shraddhu*, they shall call upon both of them." Has reference to the 'son of two fathers,' because of his premising: '*They become sons of two fathers*.'

CXII.

The obligations and rights of the son of two fathers, in regard to obsequies and succession, defined whether other sons exist, or not

25. If either the natural parent, or the adoptive father, have no other male issue, the *Dwyamooshyayunu*, or 'son of two fathers,' shall present the funeral oblation to him, and shall take his estate; but not so if there be [male issue]. If both have legitimate sons, he offers an oblation to neither, but takes a quarter of the share allotted to a legitimate son of his adoptive father; ¹ from this text of VUSISHTHU ²: "When a son has been " adopted, if a legitimate son be afterwards born, the given son takes a " fourth part:" and likewise this of KATYAYUNU ³: "If a legitimate son be " born, the rest are pronounced shares of a *fourth part*, provided they belong " to the same tribe: but if they be of a different class, they are entitled to food " and raiment only." The reading in the KULPUTUROO is, '*a third part*.' Those

1--This passage is quoted in the Notes to the Mitakshura, page 318.

2--Datt. Mim. 153. Datt.

Chund, 201 Ante para. 16. Mit, 316. Jim. Va. 157. Datt. Mim. 61. Datt. Chund, 200 and note there.

of the same tribe, according to VINYANESHWURU ¹ are, the son of the wife, the son adopted, and the rest.

26. But if sons are wanting to both, then he shall perform a single *Shraddhu* to both also; in the mode declared above, by the term “*in one Shraddhu*,” &c. Moreover in the HEMADRI is a text of KARSHNAJINI: ² His duties defined in default of sons to both.

“As many as there may be degrees of forefathers, with so many, their own forefathers, let sons given, and the rest associate the deceased; in order, their sons with two forefathers, their grandsons with one, should [do] the same. *The fourth degree, at pleasure.* ³ This [*supindu* relation] extends to three degrees.” “*At the regular seasons*, there is no distinction of degrees: but on the [anniversary] day of death, having invoked them singly, let him perform the *Shraddhu* according to the proper rite.” Which sense is consonant also to the text of KATYAYUNU. [para. 24].

27. This is the meaning: ‘The son of two fathers, and the rest, shall perform the *supindee kurun* of those dying in the families of both the real and adoptive father, together with those of the same degree, [that is] in company with the father [of the deceased], and the rest. But the sons of those adopted, and the rest, shall perform their *Supindee kurun* together with that of both the natural, and adoptive [father]. Their grandsons also shall associate their real father with their adoptive grandfather, and their real great-grandfather.’ *The fourth degree*, their great-grandson. *Pleasure*, desire; that is, they shall invoke the adopter, or not, [as they please]; but the real father, they shall even summon. *At the regular seasons*; that is, at the days of new moon, [*Umavasyu*] and other seasons, the *Shraddhu* according to the degrees of [forefathers] of the real and adoptive fathers, is to be celebrated. But on the anniversary of death, having invo-

Detailed explanation of the text. CXIII.

1—Mit. page 316. Ante Section 4th, para. 41—et seq.

2—Dutt. Mim. 120. Dutt. Chund. 109.

3—*Chakundu* instead of *Chakedu* “excluded” which is the reading of the Dutt. Mim. and Chund.

ked the single person alone, let them celebrate the *Ekoddishtu shraddhu* for him.

Opponent's
argument
against the
term 'sim-
ple adopted'

28. Some however say : ' Since the Rite of simple adoption is not [mentioned], it does not exist; and there is no agreement to the effect : ' He belongs to us both', because no Rite for it exists. One taken without this agreement, therefore, is even a son of two fathers.—And even by him, either a double *shraddhu*, or a single one, may be celebrated, by invoking [singly or together] both his real and adoptive father, in the *Umavasyu* and other [*shraddhus*.] But the *supindee kurun*, *Parvunu*, and other *shraddhus*, must be performed for the adopted son, in company with both his real and adoptive father, by his son. Even so, by his son, and the rest.'

Answered
and refuted.

CXIV.

29. This must be considered. Because, though the phrase ' simple adopted' is certainly no where mentioned, still, however, this [meaning] satisfactorily results, even from the declaration of the entire cessation of the connexion with the real father and the rest, by the above recorded text of MUNOO [para. 21] which prohibition does not apply in a *Dwyamooshyayunu* adoption. Further: A Marriage in the family of the procreator [*Veeji*] within seven degrees, which is altogether illegal according to the Text of GOUTUMU¹: " With the kinsmen on the side of the father, viz. of the procreator [*Veeji*] beyond the seventh degree; and with those on the mother's side, beyond the fifth &c.," would be unmeaning in a *Dwyamooshyayunu* adoption, because the *Supindu* affinity [to the procreator] still exists therein [beyond that]. Therefore, the term, ' simple adopted,' must necessarily be expressed, to make the same agree with that of the Text, because of the declaration of the prohibition of the *Supindu* connexion.

A text of
the *pruvur-*
adhyaya
adduced in

30. Moreover, in the *PRUVURADHYAYU* [it is said]²: " They who become sons of two fathers, [*Dwyamooshyayunu*] whether adopted, purchased, or the

1—Dutt. Mim. 107.

2—Dutt. Mim. page 126 and note. Dutt. Chund. 182.

“ rest, cannot take in marriage any one of *either Gotru*, after the example of “ SHOUNGA and SHAISHIRU.” In which also, the term, *either Gotru*, is spoken of the *Dwyamooshyayunu*. And the prohibition of connexion in the real family [*Gotru*] is declared by the text of MUNOO; which is the difference [between the two]. By the distinction also, between adopted son, ‘simple,’ and, ‘son of two fathers’ [the term, simple] is proper to be included; whence even the propriety of the term ‘simple adopted son’ is established.

favour of
the argu-
ment.

31. Even so BHUTTU SOMESHWURU¹, satisfactorily reconciles the one doctrine, under the text of MUNOO [para. 21]: “ That there was a cessation “ of the *supindu* connexion between URJOONU [as] the son of KOONTI, [born “ after she was] given in adoption by [her father] SOORU to KOONTIBHOJU, “ and SOOBHUDRA, [as] the daughter of WUSOODDEVU, who was the son of “ SOORU,” with the opposite opinion, “ that URJOONU could not marry the “ said SOOBHUDRA,” as might seem to result from that text of GOUTUMU, “ [para. 29] applying solely to the prohibition of [a wife] come of the father’s “ kindred,” by adducing the affirmation of the commentaries in favor of the utter exclusion of the family connexion [after the adoption.] ”

And sup-
ported by a
quotation
from the
Mimansa.

32. As for what SOME AUTHOR says: ‘ That the *supindu* connexion of “ KOONTI with the family of SOORU, is declared by SOMESHWURU, under the “ Text of GOUTUMU, to continue through seven degrees,’ the reason is, that

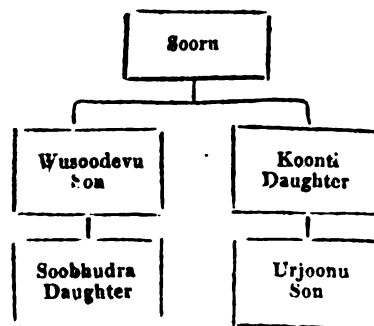
CXV.

An author’s
opinions re-
futed.

1—In the Mimansa.

2—This will be more intelligible from the following Genealogy.

Urjoonu’s real father was Indra, though he took the name of Pandavu from his mother’s husband Pandeo, and in marrying Soobhudra, espoused his maternal uncle’s daughter [which is reprobated in general. See Chap. 1st, Sec. 1st, para. 13] but as the mother had been previously given away in adoption, their relationship, as cousins by the mother’s side, had ceased.



he has not read the Book. Therefore, the text of Goutumu, after having previously declared the cessation of *supindu* relationship, refers to the prohibition [of marriage] in the family of the natural father, and not as considering the subject of *supindu* relationship. In this way, the correctness of the terms, son 'simple adopted,' and 'son of two fathers,' being established, the possibility of an agreement to the effect: "He shall belong to us both," [para. 21] is likewise established; for the object is manifest, by the acceptor knowing him to be 'son of two fathers.' And again, the *supindu* relationship of the simple adopted son, extends, in his adoptive father's family, to seven degrees on the father's side, and to five degrees on the Mother's side.

The authority of three Texts denied, to apply to the simple adopted son.

33. As for these texts, of VRIDDHU GOUTUMU: ¹ "The sons given, purchased, and the rest, who are adopted from those of his own general family, by the observance of form, enter the lineage [*Gotrutu*, of the adopter]. But the relation of *supindu* is not included," as well as of BRUHUT MUNOO: ² "Sons given, purchased, and the rest, retain relation of *supindu* to the natural father, as extending to the fifth, and seventh, degrees: like this, their general family, which is also that of their adopter," and moreover of NARUDU ³: "For the sake of religious merit, [being adopted] like the real son, under the family name of each respectively [*tut tut gotrenu*] sons [who are] reared: for such, merely participation in a share, and [the oblation of] the funeral cake, is declared" they are, all three, not of good authority; [at least, if their authority be good, they are to be used only for the sake of determining the want of *supindu* relationship of] the *Dwya-mooshyayunu*, as far as seven generations, in the family of the adopter; for, in the case of a simple adopted son, his *supindu* relationship, as far as seven generations in the family of the adopter [*Paluk*] is declared [to commence],

1—Dutt. Mim. 108-26. noticing our Author's objection. Dutt. Chund. 191.

2—Dutt. Mim. 27 and note q. v. 106.

3—Dutt. Mim. 199 note, where our Author is again noticed and the text attributed to Devulu.

by the before quoted text of Goutumu, [para. 29] and because his *supindu* relationship at the same time, in the family of his real father, is declared to cease by the text of Munoo, [para. 21.] CXVI.

34. As for the following matter, written by certain respectable authors in discussing the subject of *supindu* relationship: " Yet if [an adopted son's] investiture and other initiatory rites, have been celebrated in the general family [*Gotru*] of his real father, his *supindu* relationship to his real father's family [*Kool*] is retained, both to the father, and to the mother; to the fifth degree [from the mother], and to the seventh [from the father]: but to three degrees in the family of the adopter, by reason that there is a want of the state of begetting, and of investiture, to the author of the secondary paternal relation, the adopter. However, if the adopted son be [so] initiated in the general family of the adopter, his [*supinda* relationship] with the adopter and the rest [of his family, will continue] even to seven generations, and to five [as above]:" its foundation is not known. The reasoning of certain authors declared to be unfounded.

35. Again: If the paternal relation exists not, by reason of the absence of the acts of begetting, of investiture, and the like, in what manner arises the adopted son's *supinda* relationship to either [even], as far as three degrees, or his performance of *Shraddhu* and other ceremonies for the adopter and the rest of his family? Neither can it be said, 'the paternal relation and *supinda* relation are [necessarily] connected,' because by this, on the absence of the first, the want of the *supinda* relationship would ensue. The result of it is this: *Supinda* relationship even [of the adopted son], with the adopter and the rest of his family, has been already pronounced from the text of Goutumu and others [para. 29]: " With the kinsmen on the side of the procreator beyond the seventh degree." And this is conclusive. Conclusion drawn.

36. ¹ Now this is the rite for gift and acceptance of a son. In this mat- Summary in conclusion.

1—The remainder of this Section, though not found in any Goojurat Copies was introduced from one obtained at Poona. It appears to be an extract from some other work, or, a summary of the doctrine of the Muyookhu, by some more modern authors.

ter, the power of giving [in adoption], where there are more sons than one, allows even of any one of them, not being the eldest; and that of acceptance, attaches to one who has not had a son born, or whose sons are dead. CXVII. The right of married women [to adopt, is good] with the orders of the husband; in default of him, of their [own] fathers, and the rest. Of *Shoodrus* [adopting], the daughter's son, or the sister's son, are to be taken, and no other. By the other [superior classes] however, the nearest *supinda* relation; in default of them, the remote [kindred], but not one of another cast.

The Gift
inceptive,

37. Then the giver, on the day [fixed] for the acceptance, having duly called to mind the [proper] time, and the other [considerations], and having thus vowed: 'I am about to make a gift of my son for the cessation,² between myself and the rest [of my family], and this son, of the several duties arising from the reciprocal connexion, at present existing between [us, as] father, son, and the like,' shall perform the *Gunesu pooja*, *svusti vachun*,³ *matreka pooja*, *Vridddhi shraddhu*, and the other rites.

The acceptance
inceptive.

38. The acceptor too, having fasted on the day preceding that for the acceptance, and on the next day having summoned his kinsmen, and made known his taking a son to the king; having called to mind the time, and other [considerations], and having thus vowed: 'I am about to take (this person) as a son, to the cessation of the mutual connexion of father, son, or the like, at present subsisting between him, and his procreator and the rest (of that family,) and for the accession between him and me, and the rest (of my family), of the duties mutually arising from the respective connexion of father, son, and the like (by this adoption),' and having performed, the *Gunesu pooja*, *Svusti vachun*, *Matreka pooja*, *Vridddhi Shraddhu*, *Acharyu vurun*, and the various reverences to be made, after a special vow to the *acharyu*, with the earrings, ring, suit of clothes, turban, *Mudhoo purku* and the rest, let him give a feast to three *Brahmans*, and to his kindred.

2—In the original, it is "continuation" pruvritti, for nivritti, which the sense requiring, was adopted.

3—A religious rite preparatory to any important observance [Wilson], where the mode of it is described.

39. And the *Acharyu*, having thus vowed: 'I am about to do my proper duties,' and having performed the marking out of the altar, and the other [acts] as far as the consecration of the fire, inclusive, shall celebrate the rites enjoined in the words of the *Vedus*¹ and the rest, as far as the straining of the clarified butter inclusive.

Officiating
priest's du-
ties.

CXVIII.

40. Then let the acceptor, having gone near the giver, thus beg, 'Give me this son'²; and the giver, with relation of the five prayers [the initial words of the first of which are] *ye yujnyenu*, having called to mind the time, and the rest, having repeated his motives as above detailed, shall declare, 'I give you this son, adorned with ornaments, according to my ability' This is the gift of his son, commencing with the words of the *Vedus*.³

Gift com-
pleted.

41. Then the acceptor, having accepted him with the prayer *devusyu twu*, and the others, and having repeated the *Kamu stooti* in the form enjoined by his own *Shakha*, having inaudibly repeated the mystical invocation *ungad un-gat*, &c. having kissed the forehead of the child, let him carry him within his own house, adorned with clothes and so forth, accompanied with rejoicings.

Acceptance
completed.

42. Next, the *Acharyu*, having performed the setting up of the clarified butter, and the rest, as far as the portioning of it, inclusive, having performed a burnt offering even with the clarified butter, with the *Vyahruti* incantation, both backwards and in due order, having dressed the oblations, let him offer a burnt offering. He then commences the principal burnt offering of dressed oblations, for acceptance of a son, with the words of the *Vedus*.⁴ Having commenced with the words, "*Toobhyum ugne*," &c. let him conclude with those commencing "*Pragvuduttuh*." Thus ends the rite of adoption.

Priests' du-
ties, conti-
nued and
concluded.

CXIX.

1—From 'Unvadhane chukshoo,' line 1st, to 'krutum,' line 3d.
following passages, turn to para. 8, and the references there.

2—Dutt. Min. 97. For this and the

3—From 'Ye yujnyenu,' line 5, to 'Guti.'

4—In the last line of the page.

SECTION VI.

PARTITION OF DEBTS, AND OF CONCEALED EFFECTS.

The debts,
to be con-
sidered at a
partition
are of three
kinds:

1. This settled, I return [to my subject] ¹ KATYAYUNU states a distinction in partition of debts²: "The debt of the father, one incurred by a parcener " himself *on account of the debts of the father*, and one *specially his own*; " debts so incurred, must be examined on a partition with the kinsmen." *On account of the debts of the father*, incurred for the sake of discharging the father's debts. *Specially his own*, [contracted by other] than himself, for the maintenance of his family. THE SAME AUTHOR says: ³ "A debt " contracted by a brother, a paternal uncle, or a mother, for the [support of " the] family, must be fully discharged by the coheirs, when partition is " made."

Such debts,
when cover-
ed by the
estate to be
first paid,
and the re-
sidue to be
divided.

2 THE SAME AUTHOR also says, in case the debt be less than the property: ⁴ "But having given the debt [to the creditors], and what was " *bestowed* through affection, let them divide the balance." *Bestowed*, promised. NARUDU: ⁵ "What remains, after discharging *the father's donation*, " and after payment of his debts, may be divided by the brethren, so that " their father continue not a debtor." *The father's donation*, what had been promised by the father. THE SAME AUTHOR says: ⁶ "What has " been given for religious purposes, and through affection, and the debt " which has been added by himself, that [and] the visible [estate], let " them divide; [any other debt] is not to be given, out of the paternal es- " tate." The meaning is this: "What has been given for religious purposes, as well as through affection; [that is] what it has been agreed to give; and what has been added by the father himself, [that is] what has been made

Payment
out of the
paternal es-
tate. CXX.
tate restric-
ted to par-
ticular ob-
ligations.

1—From Section 4th, para. 40th.

2—Digest 3d, 390.

3—Digest 3d, 389.

4—Digest 3d, 388, where a different turn is given to the Text.

5—Digest. 3rd, 73 Jim. Va. 21.

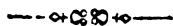
where the same difference is observable between these two translations, as in that of the foregoing text and our author, whose version is altogether different from both.

6—Digest 3d, 391.

by himself; such debts [and the visible estate] they shall divide. Payment [*Danu*] is not [allowable], out of the paternal estate, of debts other than these.'

3. THE SAME AUTHOR also says, in suspicion of effects undiscovered: ¹ "A house, arable land, or quadrupeds, discovered [after partition, as the property of the deceased], must be [equally] divided; if it be justly suspected that effects are concealed, a discovery by ordeal is prescribed by law." "Thus MUNOO declared, that household utensils, beasts of burthen, and milch cattle, ornaments, and *workmen*, must be divided, when discovered [among the heirs]: if effects are [suspected to be] hidden, a discovery must be obtained by the *Koshu* mode of ordeal ²." *Workmen*: slaves, and the like. Here even, the *Koshu* ordeal itself has been fixed in such matters, in the chapter on ordeals, by this very authority: "In sustaining the truth of doubts in partition among heirs, at all times, [and] in settling a multitude of proofs [*kriya*], let them even undergo the *Koshu* ordeal."

Partition of effects concealed and discovered after partition; with the mode prescribed for their discovery.



SECTION VII.

OF PROPERTY NOT LIABLE TO DIVISION, [*UFIBHAJYUM*.]

1. MUNOO says ³: "Wealth, however, acquired by learning, belongs exclusively to any one of them who acquired it; so does any thing given by a friend, received [at or] on account of marriage, or presented as a mark of respect to a guest." VYASU: ⁴ "Wealth gained by science, or earned by valour, or received from affectionate kindred, belongs, at the time of partition, to him [who acquired it], and shall not be claimed by the

Certain property not subject to partition.

CXXI.

1—Digest 3d, 396, where the text is attributed to Katyayunu; at page 90 of that Vol. the last stanza is read differently, and attributed to BRUHUSPUTI.

2—See Chap. 3d.

3—Chap. 9th 206.

Jim. Va 110-116. Digest 3d, 332. Reports 1st, 64, 2d, 57.

4—Jim. Va. 110-117, Digest 3d, 333.

"coheirs." *Received from affectionate kindred*; [*Soudayukum*; this term] will be hereafter explained ¹.

If gained without assistance from the common stock.

2. This [wealth] must be understood to be acquired, without loss to the father's estate. Thus also YANYUWOLKYU: ² "Whatever else is acquired "by the coparcener himself, without detriment to the father's estate, as, a "present from a friend, or a gift at nuptials, does not appertain to the coheirs; "nor shall he who recovers hereditary property, which had been taken away, "give it up to the parceners: nor what has been gained by science."

Special rule regarding land recovered,

3. But SHUNKHU declares a special rule, relating to the recovery of land, derived from ancestors but long lost: ³ "Land [inherited] in regular succession, but which had been formerly lost, and which a single [heir] shall "recover solely by his own labour, the rest may divide, according to their "due allotments; having first given him a *fourth part*." That is, 'having given to the recoverer a *fourth part*, of the recovered property, they shall divide the balance equally, with the recoverer.'

Other texts adduced:

4. MUNOO says ⁴: "What a brother has acquired by his labour, without using the patrimony, he need not give up to the coheirs; nor what "has been gained by science." VYASU ⁵: "What a man gains by his own "ability, without relying on the patrimony, he shall not give up to the "coheirs, nor what he acquired by learning." Acquisition by *learning* is explained by KATVAYUNU: ⁶ "Wealth gained through science, which was "acquired from a stranger, while receiving a foreign maintenance, is termed acquisition through *learning*."

Acquisitions through learning enumerated

CXXII,

5. THE SAME author elucidates this term: ⁷ "What is gained by the "solution [of a difficulty], after a prize has been offered, must be considered as acquired through *science*, and is not included in partition [among

1—At para. 13; and in Section 10th, para. 8th.

1st, 64-244.

3—Mit. 268. Jim. Va. 135 Digest 3d, 365.

Jim. Va. 109-117. Digest. 3d, 329. Of the two readings of this text, our Author adopts that of the Mitakshura.

6—Mit, 271, Digest 3d, 333.

2—Mit. 268. Jim. Va. 109-117. Digest 3d, 343. Reports

4—Chap. 9th 208 Mit 271

5—Jim Va, 109, Digest 3d, 341,

7—Jim, Va, 127, Digest 3d, 333.

“ coheirs].” “ What has been obtained from a pupil, or by officiating as
 “ a priest, or for [answering] a question, or for determining a doubtful point,
 “ or through *display* of knowledge, or by [success in] disputation, or for
 “ *superior* [skill in] *reading*, the sages have declared to be the gains of *science*,
 “ and not subject to distribution.” “ The law is the same in *regard also to*
 “ *artizans* [*Shilpee*], and to *increase of price*”¹: “ A prize which has been
 “ offered for the display of superior learning, and a gift received from a vo-
 “ tary for whom a sacrifice was formerly performed; or a present from
 “ a pupil formerly instructed, sages have declared to be the acquisition of
 “ *science*: what is otherwise acquired, is [the] joint property [of the coheirs].”
 “ Even what is won by surpassing another in learning, after a stake has
 “ been deposited, BRUHUSPUTI pronounces the acquisition of *science*, and
 “ impartible. What is obtained by the boast of learning, what is received
 “ from a pupil, or for the *performance of a sacrifice*, BHRUGOO calls the ac-
 “ quisition of *science*.”

6. *Solution*, according to the MUDUNU RUTNU, means, the reading of And defin-
ed.
 [passages of the VEDUS] having the order [of construction, *krumu*], and the
 sentences [*Juta*], and the like², duly linked together. Some again, say it
 is the interpretation, in a public assembly, of concealed [meanings] required
 to be made known. The construction is, ‘ solved after a prize [has been
 ‘ offered].’ *Display*, public exhibition. *Superior reading*, pre-eminent
 reading. *In regard also to artizans*, meaning, that this law, respecting sci-
 ence, is to be applied also among Artizans. *Increase of price*, caused by
 great satisfaction [with the work]. *Performance of a sacrifice* is merely an
 example.

7. Here also, in all these cases, indivisibility applies, only when no All such li-
able to par-
tition if
made with
assistance
 detriment has fallen on the paternal estate, in acquiring, as well superior

¹ Digest 3d, 334 The quotation in Jim, Va, breaks off after this.

² See Asiatic Researches 8th, 300.

from the
common
stock.

CXXIII.

knowledge, as wealth; for, in case of detriment [to the estate, the acquisition] is even divisible. Even so, KATYAYNU says: ¹ " Yet BRĀHMSPUTI
" has ordained, that wealth shall be partible, if it was gained by learned
" brothers who were instructed in the family by their father, or paternal
" grandfather, [or uncles]; and it is the same, if the wealth were acquired
" by valour, [with assistance from the family estate.]"

The acquir-
er getting a
double
share.

8. Also in case of loss to the paternal estate even, the acquirer gets a double share, from this text of VASISHTHU ²: " He amongst them, who has
" made an acquisition, may take a double portion of it."

An excep-
tion with
regard to
acquisition
by learning.

9. NARUDU states a distinction in some cases, in acquisition of wealth through learning: ³ " He who maintains the family of a brother studying
" science, shall take, even though *not told*, [*Ushrootu*] a share of the wealth
" gained by science." The word *ushrootu* means *unlearned*, according to the
MUDUNU RUTNU. ⁴ But the proper sense is, *not promised*, thus: 'I will
give a share.'

Distinction
in wealth
acquired
without de-
triment to
the pater-
nal estate.

10. GOUTAMA ⁵ declares a distinction also, with regard to wealth acquired without detriment to the father's estate: " His own acquired wealth,
" *a learned man* may, if he please, give up to unlearned coheirs." He who is
versed in knowledge, is a *learned man*. The meaning is, that, with his own
pleasure, he may give it to his unlearned brethren. KATYAYNU ⁶: " No
" part of the wealth, which is gained by science, need be given, by a learn-
" ed man, to his unlearned coheirs; but such property must be yielded
" by him, to those who are equal, or superior, in learning." ⁷: " A learned
" man need not give a share of his own acquired wealth, without his assent,
" to an unlearned coheir: provided it were not gained by him, using the

¹—Digest 3d, 340.

²—Jim. Va. 30 Digest 3d, 109-356.

³—Mit. 270 Jim. Va. 111 Digest 3. 361.

⁴—The commentators are here differing about the sense to be given to *Shrooti*, whether it is to mean the *Fedus*, [and thence the *Knowledge* of them] or hearing, [and thence telling, *promise*, which last our author prefers.

⁵—Jim. Va. 112 Digest 3d, 349, but our author adopts a different reading.

⁶—Jim. Va. 112 Digest 3d, 342.

⁷—The following text is one of NARUDU Jim. Va. 112. Digest 3d, 342.

“paternal estate.” According to MUDUNU, this prohibition applies, only where there exists other property for those brothers who are present: but on failure of other property, [a share of it] even must be given to them.

11 BRUHUSPUTI declares that to be impartible, which has been given by the father or other [person]: “That which may have been given, either by the paternal grandfather, or the father, as well as by the mother, is not to be taken back; any more than that acquired by valour, or the wealth of a wife.” NARUDU¹: “Excepting what is gained by valour, the wealth of a wife, and what is acquired by science, which are three sorts of property exempt from partition; and any favor conferred by a father.” KATYAYUNU:² “That which is taken under a standard, is declared not to be subject to distribution. And also, what is seized [by a soldier] in war, after routing the forces of the enemy, and after risking his life for his lord, is named spoil taken under a standard.” THE SAME AUTHOR says: “When [a soldier] performs a gallant action, despising danger; and favor is shewn to him by his lord, pleased with that action; whatever property is then received by him, shall be considered as gained by valour.”

Gifts from the father &c, impartible, as well

CXXIV.

as acquisition by valour.

12. Here VYASU states a distinction:⁴ “The brethren participate in that wealth, which one of them gains by valour or the like, using any common property, either a vehicle [or weapon] or the like; to him, two shares should be given: but the rest should share alike.”

Acquisitions by valour, impartible, if assisted by the common stock.

13 VYASU defines the gifts of affectionate kindred, [*Soudayukum*]:⁵ “That which is received, by a married woman or by a maiden, in the house of her husband or of her father, from her husband or from her parents, is termed the gift of affectionate kindred.” KATYAYUNU:⁶ “What is received with a damsel equal in class, at the time of accepting her [in

Gift of affectionate kindred.

Wealth received with a maiden defined.

1—Mit. 253, Jim. Va. 110-117 Digest 3d, 343.

2—3—Jim. Va. 131 In the Digest 3d 367, these

texts are attributed to MUNOO, but not found in his institutes.

4—Jim. Va. 111 Digest 3d, 71.

5—The text is afterwards, in Sect. 10th para 8th, attributed to KATYAYUNU, and read differently “with a maiden.

6—In the Digest 3d, 363, this text is attributed to MUNOO, but is not found.

“ marriage], let a man consider as *wealth received with the maiden*; it is
 “ deemed pure, and promotes increase [of prosperity]: But let him know
 “ that to be received on account of marriage, which is accepted by him
 CXXV. “ with his bride: all such wealth is considered as vindicating the solemn
 “ rite.”

Partition of
 wealth re-
 ceived with
 a maiden
 governed by
 like rules as
 acquisitions
 by learning.

14 What is acquired in this, or a similar manner: “The *Arshu* rite
 “ again [consists in giving his daughter] after having received a pair of
 kine.” ¹ is denominated, *wealth received with the maiden*. Here even, like
 wealth acquired by learning, such acquisition also is impartible, if it be ac-
 quired without detriment to the father's estate: But, if gained by any other
 means, except learning or the other [specified modes], it is even liable to
 partition. And so Munoo: ² “ And if all of them, being unlearned, ac-
 “ quire property [before partition] by their own *labour*, there shall be an
 “ equal division of that property [without regard to the first born]; for it
 “ was *not* the wealth of *their father*: this rule is clearly settled.” *Labour*,
 employment in agriculture &c. *Not of their father*, is to be taken, as without
 assistance from the father's wealth.

Other
 things ex-
 empted
 from parti-
 tion.

15. Other things exempt from partition, have been enumerated by Mu-
 noo: ³ “ *Clothes, vehicles, ornaments; prepared food, water; women; sa-*
 “ *crifices and pious acts*; as well as *the common way*, are declared not li-
 “ ble to distribution.” *Vehicles*, conveyances. The *clothes, conveyances*,
 and *ornaments*, belong respectively to the possessor, if they are of equal
 value. If the value of one article be more or less than that of another, then
 let them be divided.

16. But the *clothes*, &c. and other [things] worn by the father, must be
 given to the person who partakes of food at his obsequies; as directed by
 BRUHSPUTI: ⁴ “ The *clothes* and ornaments, the bed, and similar furniture,

¹—Mit, acharadhyaya leaf 8 page 1st. See Munoo, chap. 3d, v. 29. Digest 3d, 604. ²—Chap. 9th, v. 205. Digest
 2d, 584. Reports 2d. 57. ³—Chap. 9th, 219. Mit. 272. Jim. Va. 132, Digest 3d, 378. ⁴—Mit. 272.

“ appertaining to the father, as well as his vehicle and the like, should be
 “ given, after perfuming them with fragrant drugs and wreaths of flowers,
 “ to the person who partakes of the funeral repast.”

17. If the goats, &c. be unequal in number, a distinct mode of disposal is ordained by MUNOO: ¹ “ Let them never divide a single goat or sheep, or a single beast with uncloven hoofs: a single goat or sheep belongs to the first born.”

Special rule for certain animals.

CXXVI.

18. Both the *prepared food* and *water*, are to be enjoyed [by all] according to their occasions. *Women*, female slaves. If they be of an odd number, they are to be caused to work [for all] according to their occasions. But if of an even number, they are to be distributed.

Explanation of the former text continued.

19. However, if they were set apart by the father, they are not to be distributed, even if of an equal number, by reason of this text of GOUTUMU; ² “ No partition is allowed, in the case of women connected [with the father or with one of the coheirs].”

The father's women reserved.

20. According to the KULPUTUROO: ‘ By the term *sacrifices and pious acts*, [*Yogu-kshemu*] holy councillors, family priests, and the like, are denoted.’ But LOUGAKSHI says ³: “ The learned have named a *conservatory act*, *kshemu*; and a *sacrificial one*, *yogu*: both are pronounced indivisible: and so are the bed and the chair.” In this place, a *conservatory act*, means [construction of] tanks, gardens, and the like: a *sacrificial one*, a grand sacrifice, a feast to *Brahmans*, and the like. The meaning is this: Whatever property is, with consent of all whilst in a state of unity, set apart for this purpose, and kept by one individual, with that very property that act of religion shall be executed, by that same individual, and by no other: Neither shall all join for the purpose. *The common way*, the way to the house or the like, also land for a cattle pasture, and the like.

Explanation of the terms of the Text continued.

¹—Chap 9th, 119. Mit. 273. Digest 2d, 581.

²—3—Mit. 274. Jim. Va. 132-3, notes.

A Text of
SHUNKHU
and LIKHITU
and of
VYASU, ex-
plained.

CXXVII.

Rules for
appropriating
certain
things of an
impartible
nature.

21. As for this text of SHUNKHU and LIKHITU:¹ “ No division of a
“ *dwelling* takes place; nor of water-pots, ornaments, and things not of
“ general use:” and this of VYASU:² “ A place of sacrifice, a *field*, a
“ vehicle, dressed food, water, and women, are not divisible among kins-
“ men, though [transmitted] for a thousand generations,” whereby they
declare the impartible nature, both of a *dwelling* and a *field*, they have
reference to a religious foundation, and land for cattle pasture, and the like;
[or else] to the prohibition of the partition, by the *Kshutriyu* or other [son of
a *Brahmun* by women of the other tribes,] of these two things, obtained [by
the *Brahmun*] by acceptance of donation; because it has been already
noticed as forbidden.³ Or [thirdly], it may refer to a partition of even
these two things, when of little price, at a valuation, and not by actual divi-
sion of them.

22. BRUHUSPUTI declares a distinction, in regard to Clothes and other
matters:⁴ “ They by whom it is affirmed, that *clothes* and the like are
“ indivisible, have not proved that the collected wealth of opulent men,
“ their vehicles and ornaments, shall not be divided; property held in
“ common [would be] unemployed, for it cannot be given to one [in exclu-
“ sion of another]: therefore it must be divided by [some mode deduced
“ from] reasoning; else it would be useless. By the sale of clothes, and
“ ornaments; on the recovery of a written debt; by compensating the dressed
“ food with [an equal allotment of] undressed grain; an [equitable] partition
“ is made.” “ Water drawn from a [single] well or pool, shall be taken by
“ turns: Let a [single] female slave be successively employed by coheirs in
“ their respective houses, according to their several shares; if numerous,
“ the slaves shall be distributed in equal allotments: such is the law in
“ respect of female servants. A bridge and a *field* shall be shared [by

1—Jim. Va. 133. Digest 3d, 372.

3—Ante Section 4th, para. 28.

2—Jim. Va. 133. Digest 3d, 375.

4—Digest 3d, 378-9.

" coheirs] in due proportion : and the pasture ground for cattle shall be
 " used by the coheirs in proportion to their allotments." *On the recovery*,
 meaning, by levying it from the debtor.

23. KATYAYUNU : ¹ " *Wealth* which has been fixedly assigned for the
 " purpose of religion, and entered in a Deed ; and likewise water ; slaves
 " also, and such *fixed property* [or a corrody, *Nibundhu*] as has gone in
 " order of descent ; clothes that have been worn, and ornaments, *do not*
 " *resemble* [divisible effects]. According to the time they have been enjoyed,
 " even so let them be made use of [in turns] by the brothers." *Wealth*,
 means such as has been set apart as the share [to be expended for] reli-
 gion, and so entered in a Deed. *Water*, contained in wells or the like.
Fixed property, a means of livelihood [*Vritti*.] *Do not resemble*, [that is, CXXVIII.
 are] unfit for partition.

Other arti-
cles of a like
nature noti-
ced.

24. The division of property, concealed by deceit from the other brethren,
 is thus explained by YANYUWULKYU : ² " *Effects*, which have been *withheld*
 " by one coheir from another, and which are discovered after the separation,
 " let them again divide in equal shares : this is a settled rule." *Effects*,
withheld, whether by the eldest, younger, or other brother, among the
 coheirs ; for thus says MUNOO : ³ " An *eldest Brother*, who from avarice
 " shall defraud his *younger* brothers, shall forfeit the honours of his primo-
 " geniture, be deprived of his [additional] share, and be chastised by the
 " king."

Division of
common
property
fraudulent-
ly conceal-
ed or with-
held.

25. In this place, also, the term *eldest brother*, is used merely to denote
 the heirs generally, by the argument exemplified in the loaf and staff ; ⁴ and
 the meaning is : ' If blame attaches even to the eldest, how much more to
 the younger ones ? ' Even so GOUTUMU : ⁵ " Him indeed, who deprives

By any of
the coheirs
whomso-
ever.

1—Digest 3d, 375. The translation is altered to suit the gloss.

2—Cole. Mit. 293. Jim. Va. 230. Digest 3d, 397.

3—Chap. 9th, 213. Mit. 294. Digest 2d, 564.

4—Mit note to page 294.

5—Mit. 294, [from which, this appears to be a passage of the

Vedus.] The subsequent gloss is all, except a few words, a transcript from the MITAKSHURA.

“ an *heir* of his right share, he does certainly destroy; or, if he destroy not him, he destroys his son, or else his grandson.” Whoever debars, or excludes from participation, an heir, or person entitled to a share; he, being thus debarred of his share, destroys that person, who so debars him of his right; or if he do not destroy him, he destroys his son, or his grandson.

A fresh partition of it ordained.

26. NARUDU: “ That wealth, which has been acquired by a man after separation, belongs to himself alone: what has been recovered, after being seized or lost, and the *before mentioned*, [property] *may be afterwards* [divided].” *Before mentioned*, as [property] concealed by any one, among the coheirs. *May be afterwards*,—divided; is wanting [to complete the sense.]
CXXIX. MUNOO ¹: “ When any common property whatever, is brought to light after partition has been effected, that is not considered a [fair] partition; it must even be made over again,”

Means for ascertaining a disputed partition.

27. YANYUWULKYU: ² states the modes of decision in case of denial of partition made by any one: “ When partition is denied, the fact of it may be ascertained by the evidence of kinsmen, relatives, and witnesses; and by written proof, or by house or field *separately possessed*.” From the term, *separately possessed*, we must understand it of house or land separately given [to each,] from the connexion between the adjective, and the thing denoted by it. NARUDU also says ³: “ If a question arise among coheirs in regard to the fact of partition, it must be ascertained by the evidence of kinsmen, by the record of the distribution, or by separate transaction of affairs.”

The exercise of religious duties another mode of proof.

28. THE SAME author says: ⁴ “ The religious duty of *unseparated* brethren is single. When partition has indeed been made, religious duties become separate for each of them.” Here the term *unseparated*, is inten-

1—This text is not found in the Institutes.
Reports 1st, 161-211-212.

2—3—Cole Mit 376, Jim. Va. 236. Digest 3d, 407-414.
4—Mit. 377. Digest 3d, 417. Reports 1st, 161-211.

ded even to denote the condition, whilst the substantive, *brethren*, is [merely] a general term, of which the condition is so denoted. By this [reasoning,] in every unseparated family, of whomsoever it may consist, father, grandfather; son, son's son; paternal uncle, brother, brother's son, or other [member], the religious duty is even single. ¹

29. Here again, as, in the unity of place, time, agent, and the like, one agent is by reasoning obtained for several causes, as supporting several parts of one act; so even, we may understand from the text, that there may be distinct acts, of agents [otherwise] unseparated. Hence, all those religious acts required for performance of sacred, as well as of more common Rites, even of unseparated brethren, are separate for each, in manner of the distinctions in the nature of a consecrated and a common fire, and the like, though mutually connected. Even so the *shraddhu* also, of the paternal uncle, brother, son, or other, [dying without a son] at the *Umawasyu*, and other [seasons], is even separate, by reason of the separation of the deified [person from the *parvunu* rite]: But the *shraddhu* &c. of brothers [dying] without [maintenance of] a sacred fire, is to be executed by one instrument [or agent] only, because all the deified persons are conjoined. In case of separation of place, by residence abroad, the *shraddhus* are even separate. The [extra] acts with the fire, requisite for the rites of those who maintained a sacred fire, also, are even separate; but the worship of the household deities, the *Vaiswudevus* and other rites, are to be done by one agent only. Even so SHAKULU says: ² "Residing with one dressing of food, worship of a single household deity, and moreover one single sacrifice at meals to the *Viswudevus*, or manes, shew unity. In a family of divided brethren, these acts are performed in each house separately."

The performance of religious duties in a family explained.

CHXX.

¹—Reports 2d, 57.

²—Reports 1st, 212.

The Texts
of Asvula-
sana quo-
ted.

30. As for the text of ASVULAYANU, as quoted in the PARIJATU: "Of those who reside with one dressing of food, even if [previously] separated, O my lord, one alone shall perform *those* four sacrifices, *which follow* the *Vak yugnyu*; if men of the twice born classes, unseparated as well as separated, have their meal dressed separate, let them each celebrate these sacrifices distinct, previous to taking their food, day by day;" it has reference to persons reunited [after separation], because this conclusion is clearly ascertained, from the one phrase, "of separated persons also, residing with one dressing of food," and the other: "of separated, and unseparated [coparceners," in the text].

And exam-
ined, though
of doubtful
authority.
CXXXI.

31. Therefore, in case there be a separate dressing of food, among reunited [coparceners], the great sacrifices [*Maha yugnyu*] are separate. The *Vak yugnyu*, is the *Brahmu yugnyu*. The phrase, *those which follow it*, is here the *Utudgoonu* form of a *Buhoobrihi* compound, [not being a component part of that which it denotes]; or if it were of the other form, [being a component part], the phrase, 'the *Vak yugnyu*, and the rest', would be void of meaning; for the ascertainment of all the four is certain, even from the fact that: In giving up the first of the five ceremonies, there would be no attainment of the end. Hence, the *Brahmu yugnyu* is to be even separately done. But [after all], these two texts are not respected by venerable authors.

The same
objection
applied to
some Texts
quoted in
other
books.

32. And these texts also, recorded in the DHARMU PRAVARTTI: "Sons unseparated must celebrate one anniversary *shraddhu* for both parents: if they be in different countries, they may perform separately [it, with] the *Durshu* [or *Umavasyu*] and monthly *Shraddhus*: If they be abroad in other towns, unseparated brethren are, even at all times, to celebrate the *Durshu* and monthly *Shraddhu* for both parents, each separately: When unseparated, but resident in different towns, each living upon the wealth acquired by himself, those brothers should celebrate the *Shraddhu* and *Parvayu*, each separately," with the following one in the SMRITI SUMOOC'HAYU:

“ The *Viswudevu* sacrifice, and the anniversary *Shraddhu*, as well as the “ *Muhaluyu* [or *Pitru pukshu*] Rite, are, in case the family be spread abroad, “ to be celebrated separately, and the *Durshu Shraddhu* in like manner:” are, by a certain author, said to have reference to reunited brethren, residing in different countries. The correct opinion however is, that these even are all unauthentic.

33. Or else, if there be unity of place, time, agent, and the rest, the instrumentality of one only, is found by reasoning. But where the agents are different, the same results by the text itself; for, in a difference of place, there is a want of concurrence both of the text and reasoning too; and therefore, the separate performance of *Shraddhus* and other Rites, by any one of them whomsoever, is founded in reason: which is my conclusion.

Conclusion drawn.

34. NARUDU declares other signs also, of partition: ¹ “ Separated, but “ not unseparated, Brethren, may reciprocally bear testimony, become sureties, bestow gifts, and accept presents.” “ *Gift and acceptance*; cattle, “ grain, houses, land, and attendants, must be considered as distinct among “ separated brethren, as also *the Rules of gift; income, and expenditure.*” “ Those by whom such matters are publicly transacted with their coheirs, “ may be known to be separate, even without written evidence.” *Gift and acceptance*, have reference to borrowing transactions. These very terms, ‘gift and acceptance,’ are repeated in the second text ¹ for the sake of clearness. Acceptance of cattle and the rest among separated persons, when accomplished by each apart, is even the means of generating [sole] ownership: but among unseparated brethren, acceptance by one alone is the origin of the [joint] ownership of the others also. *The rules of gift*, written deeds, and the like. *Income*, entry [or accumulation] of principal and interest, or the

Other signs of partition enumerated.

CXXXII.

1—Ante Chap. 2d, Sect. 3d. Reports 1st, 105-211. Mit. page 377. Jim. Va. 237. Digest 3d, 407-417.

2—Or the *first*, as here transposed, evidently by the fault of the transcribers. The reading of the last text is different, the ‘rules of Gift,’ for ‘diet.’

like. BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ "They who have their income, expenditure, and
 " wealth distinct, and have mutual transactions of money lending, and traffick,
 " are undoubtedly separate." YANYUWULKYU: ² "It is declared, that bre-
 " thren, husband and wife, father and son, cannot become sureties for each
 " other before partition; nor reciprocally lend, nor give evidence for each
 " other."

In default
 of any
 marks, or-
 deal per-
 mitted.

35. In default of all these signs of partition, ordeal [must be resorted
 to], since the very SAME AUTHOR has declared: ³ "In the absence of all
 " these, a divine test is prescribed." As for the text of VRIDDHU YANYU-
 WULKYU: "In doubts upon the subject of partition, the division must be
 " proved by the kinsmen, witnesses, and written deeds: proof by ordeal is
 CXXXIII. " not to be:" it has reference to the existence of other signs.

A fresh par-
 tition to be
 made on fail-
 ure of all
 attempts to
 discover the
 fact.

36. In case also of total failure in ascertaining whether they were sepa-
 rated or united, a fresh partition is enjoined by MUNOO: ⁴ "When there is
 " a doubt of partition among the coheirs, a partition must be again made,
 " even though they have taken separate places of abode." NARUDU states
 the duties of separated coheirs: ⁵ "When there are many persons, sprung
 " from one man, who have their [religious] duties [*dhurma*] apart, and
 " transactions [*kriya*] apart, and are separate in the materials of work
 " [*kurmu goonah*], if they be not accordant in affairs, should they give or
 " sell their own shares, they do all that as they please: for they are mas-
 " ters of their own wealth." Duties; ceremonials, that is, the five great
 sacrifices, [para. 31,] and the like. Transactions, commerce, and the like
 worldly acts. The materials of work, household necessities, and the like,
 as the means of performing the acts [of the householder]. By the separate
 existence of these, a partition is manifested. The sense is, that they, so se-

Reports 1st 161.

1—Jim. Va. 268. Digest 3d, 427.

2—Digest 1st, 228.

3—Ante Chap. 1st, Sec. 2d, para. 1st.

4—Not found in the institutes.

5—Jim. Va. 332. and notes. Digest 3d, 450.

parated, may [each], even without the consent of the others, make the gift, sale, or other alienation [of their respective shares].

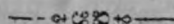
37. As for the text of BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ “Separated heirs, as those who are unseparated, are equal in respect of immovables; for one has not power over the whole, to give, mortgage, or sell it;” according to MUDUNU, it is for putting a stop to the right, among coheirs, even separated as to their shares of [movable] effects, [though unseparated in other respects], to dispose, by gift or other mode, without [general] consent, of grain, or the like, the produce of undivided fields, or other [fixed property]. According to VINYANESHWURU and others, it is for the sake of obviating any future doubt, whether they be separated or united; for, by the consent of those unseparated, the facility of the transaction is ensured.

A Text of
BRUHUSPU-
TI explain-
ed in two
ways.

38. The SAME AUTHOR ², with reference to one separated by his own wish, and afterwards disputing, says: “If he subsequently dispute a distribution, which was made with his own consent, he shall be compelled by the king to abide by his share, or be amerced if he persist in contention.” *Contention*, pertinacious pursuit.

CXXXIV.

Punish-
ment for
disputing
an amicable
division.



SECTION VIII.

ON OBSTRUCTED HERITAGE, OR SUCCESSION,—[SUPRUTIBUNDHU DAYU.]

1. Now, of the degrees of succession to obstructed heritage. YANYUWULKYU thus relates the order of succession to the wealth of one [dying] separated, and not re-united: ³ “The wife and the daughters also; both parents; brothers likewise, and their sons; gentiles, cognates, a pupil, and a fellow

Order of
succession
to one dy-
ing finally
separated,
without
male issue.

¹—Mit. 257, Jim. Va. 31. The text is, in the first anonymous, and in the second, assigned to VYASU.

²—Digest 3d, 399.

³—Mit. 324. Jim. Va. 160. Digest 3d, 457. Reports 1st, 160-202—2d, 427-370. et al.

“ *student*: on failure of the first among these, the next in order is indeed
 “ heir to the estate of one, who departed for heaven leaving no male issue.
 “ This rule extends to all [persons and] classes.”

FIRST, THE
WIFE if
faithful.

2. *The wife*, if faithful to her husband, takes his wealth; not if she be
 unfaithful; for its declared by KATYAYANA: “ Let the widow succeed to her
 “ husband’s wealth, provided she be chaste.” So HAREETU says: ¹ “ If a
 “ woman, becoming a widow in her youth, be headstrong, [suspected of
 “ incontinence] a maintenance must in that case be given to her, for the
 “ support of life.” PRUJAPUTI ²: “ Dying before her husband, a virtuous
 “ wife partakes of his *consecrated fire*; or if her husband die [before her,
 “ she shares] his wealth; this is a primeval law.” *Consecrated fire*, all the
 [five sacred] fires. The SAME AUTHOR says ³: “ Having taken his movable
 “ and immovable property, *the base* and the precious *metals*, the liquids, and
 CXXXV. “ the clothes,; let her duly offer his monthly, half yearly, and yearly, fune-
 “ ral repasts; with presents offered to his manes, and by pious liberality,
 “ let her honour the paternal uncle of her husband, his spiritual parents,
 “ and daughter’s sons, the children of his sisters, his maternal uncles, and
 “ also ancient and unprotected persons, guests, and females [of the family].”
Base metals, namely tin, lead, and the like.

A Text of
BRUHSPUTI
excepting
fixed
property,
explained
away.

3. As for this text of BRUHSPUTI ⁴: “ Whatever property a man poss-
 “ esses, of every kind, after division, whether mortgaged, or other, that the
 “ wife, [in whatever form married, *Jaya*] shall enjoy after the death of her
 “ husband, with the exception of fixed property. Even if virtuous, and if
 “ partition have been made, a woman is not fit to enjoy real property,” it,
 according to the SMRITI CHUNDRIKA, refers to a wife who has not [even] a
 daughter; for a woman having a daughter obtains the fixed property also.

1—See post para. 9, and references.

2—BRUHSPUTI Jim. Va. 158-9 Digest 3d, 458.

3—Our author varies the reading, omitting mention of grains, after metals, and reading “ *Adikum* yearly,” for
 “ *adikum*, other.”

4—Reports 1st, 58—2d, 666.

MADHUVU again, considers it to relate to the prohibition of sale, or other transfer, of real property, by a widow, without concurrence of the heirs.

4. As for this text of KATYAYUNU: "After the death of the husband the widow, preserving [the honor of] the family, shall obtain the share of her husband, so long as she lives: but she has not property [therein, to the extent of] gift, mortgage, or sale:" it is a prohibition of gift of money, or the like, to the *Bundee*, *Charun*, and the like [swindlers]. But gift for religious objects [not visible], and mortgage or the like, suitable to those objects, may even be made, since fixed and movable property are both noticed, in the above quoted text: "Having taken" &c. [para: 2d] and from this of KATYAYUNU himself: "A widow, actively engaged in meritorious observances and fasts, constant in the duties of her widowhood, intent upon restraining [her passions], and making holy gifts, even if wanting a son, shall reach the heavenly abodes."

A Text of KATYAYUNU limiting the widow's power, prohibits only improper alienations.

5. Moreover, the text of the SAME AUTHOR: ¹ "Heirless property goes to the king, deducting however a subsistence for the *females*, as well as the funeral charges: but the goods belonging to a venerable priest [*Shrotriya*] let him bestow on venerable priests": and further that of NARUDU: ² "Except the wealth of a *Brahmunu* [property goes to the king on failure of heirs]. A king, who is attentive to the obligations of duty, should give something as a maintenance to the *women* of such persons. The law of inheritance is thus declared": have both reference to *women* set apart, ³ because the term, 'lawful wife' [*Putni*], is not mentioned.

Two other Texts referred to kept women.

CXXXVI.

6. But as for this of NARUDU: ⁴ "Among brothers, if any one die without issue, or enter a religious order, let the rest of the brethren divide his wealth, except the wife's separate property. Let them allow a maintenance to his women for life, provided these preserve unsullied the bed of their

And a third, to the widows of united or re-united persons.

¹—Mit. 334.

²—Mit. 335. Jim. Va. 177. Digest 3d, 540.

³—Ante Sec. 7th, para. 19.

⁴—Mit 236. Jim. Va. 177. Digest 3d, 474.

"lord. But if they behave otherwise, the brethren may resume that allowance," it relates to the women of one dying unseparated, [or] reunited, because the reading [of the text] is upon that very subject, according to MUDUNU.

A Text of
KATYAYU-
NU exami-
ned.

7. KATYAYUNU: "But if her husband have departed for heaven, the wife obtains food and raiment: Or [*Too*], if *unseparated*, she will receive a share of the wealth, so long as she lives." The term *unseparated* is also an illustration of a re-united family. The word 'but [*too*]' has here the sense of 'or.' From this results a double object of the text, according to MUDUNU: the last [hemistich] referring to a wife lawfully married; the first, to a woman set apart. The foundation of this exposition is to be considered. But [indeed] THE SAME author clearly explains the real meaning: "She who is intent upon her service to *her* venerable *Gooroo*, is fit to enjoy the share assigned: should she not perform her proper duty, he shall order her [only] clothes [already] worn, and a morsel of food." *Her Gooroo*, her father in law, and other [venerable relatives]. At his pleasure, she may receive a share; otherwise, merely food and raiment. This is the meaning.

8. THE SAME AUTHOR says: ¹ "But a wife, who does malicious acts injurious to her husband, who has no sense of shame, who destroys his effects, or who takes delight in being faithless to his bed, is held unworthy of separate property. [*Stree dhunu*]." As for this text: "Let them follow *this very same rule* also, with females degraded [by crime]: but clothes and grain are to be given to her, and let her be caused to reside within the house," it has reference to a husband [living], says a certain modern compiler. *This very rule*, that is, regarding the divorce of a degraded [wife].

A widow
suspected
of inconti-
nence gets
only a main-
tenance.

9. Even a mere maintenance is for a woman suspected of incontinence, from this text of HAREETU: "If a woman, becoming a widow in her youth, be *headstrong* [suspected of incontinence], a maintenance must in that case

“ be given to her for the support of life.” *Headstrong*, according to the MITAKSHURA ¹, means ‘suspected of incontinence.’ This establishes our argument [The wife, if faithful, &c, para. 2d], that a lawfully married wife, restrained [in her conduct], takes the wealth. But if there be more than one, they will divide it, and take shares.

But a faithful one gets the estate. If more than one, they divide it.

10. In default of the wife, *the daughter* succeeds. Even as MUNOO says : ² “ The son of a man is even as himself, and the daughter is equal to the son : how then can any other inherit his property, but a daughter, who is as it were himself.” If there be more daughters than one, they are to divide [the estate], and take [each a share.]

THE DAUGHTER,

or daughters,

11. In a case also, where some of them are married, and some unmarried, the *unmarried* ones alone [succeed], by reason of this text of KATYAYUNU : ³ “ Let the widow succeed to her husband’s estate, provided she be chaste ; and in default of her, the daughter inherits, if *unmarried*.”

Unmarried before married ones.

12. Among the married ones, when some are possessed of [other] wealth, and others are destitute of any, these [last] even will obtain [the estate], from this text of GOUTUMU : ⁴ “ A woman’s property goes to her daughters, unmarried, or *unprovided* for.” *Unprovided*, destitute of wealth. Those acquainted with traditional law, hold, that the word, ‘*woman’s*’ [wife’s] includes the father’s also.

If married, the poorest of them.

CXXXVIII

13. In default of daughters, the *daughter’s son* [succeeds], by the text of VISHNOO ⁵ ; “ If a man leave neither son, nor son’s son, nor [wife, nor female] issue, the *daughter’s son* shall take his wealth. For in regard to the obsequies of ancestors, daughter’s sons are considered as son’s sons.”

THE DAUGHTER’S SON.

14. In default of the daughter’s son, comes the *father* ; in default of him, the *mother* : even as KATYAYUNU says : ⁶ “ The widow, being a woman of

THE FATHER, and, after him only, THE MOTHER.

1—Cole Mit. page 340. Digest 3d, 479. Reports 2d, 457.

2—Chapter 9th, 130, Jim. Va. 134. Digest

3d, 106. Reports 1st, 31.

3—Mit. 326. 341. Ante para. 2.

4—Mit. 267-312-69. Jim. Va. 82. Digest 3d, 569.

5—Mit. 343. Jim. Va. 191.

6—Mit. 326.

“ honest family, or the daughters, or on failure of them, the *father*, or the
 “ *mother*, or the brother, or his sons, are pronounced to be the heirs of one
 “ who leaves no male issue:” and likewise VISHNOO: ¹ “ The wealth of him
 “ who leaves no male issue, goes to his wife; on failure of her, it devolves
 “ on daughters; in default of daughters, it devolves on the daughters’ sons;
 “ if there be none, it belongs to *the father*; if he be dead, it appertains to
 “ *the mother*; on failure of her, it goes to the brothers; after them it descends
 “ to the brother’s sons; if none exist, it goes to the relations [*Svkoolyu*].”

The doc-
trine of the
MITAKSHU-
RA dispu-
ted.

13. As for the opinion of VINYANESHWURU: ² ‘ that in the complex term
 ‘ parents,’ the omission of one term and retention of the other [*Ekusheshu*]
 ‘ constitutes an exception to the regular compound [*Dvundru*], and although
 ‘ the order [of construction] be not certainly defined, yet the meaning [in
 ‘ favor of the mother’s priority] may be understood, because the word ‘ mo-
 ‘ ther’ stands first in the proper form of the compound; also, from the con-
 ‘ secutive order of the particular compound [‘ mother and father’] being the
 ‘ rule, of which the omission of one term and retention of the other [‘ parents’]
 ‘ is the exception, and since the father is a common parent to many sons,
 ‘ whilst the mother is not so; therefore, of the two, the mother in the first
 ‘ instance takes the estate, and on failure of her the father’ ³, it must be set

1—Mit. 326-350 note. Jim. Va. 160-194-196. Digest 3d, 489. The mention of ‘ daughter’s sons,’ is omitted in the Mit. and even in some copies of Jim. Va.; and our author leaves out the name of “ kinemen” before relations.

2—Mit. 343.

3—The remarks on this intricate and contested subject in the notes to the MITAKSHURA, page 343, are too valuable, and apposite to be omitted here. “ The commentator [on the MITAKSHURA] BALAM BHUTTU, “ is of opinion, that the father should inherit first, and afterwards the mother; upon the analogy of more “ distant kindred, where the paternal line has invariably the preference, before the maternal kindred; “ and upon the authority of several express passages of law. NUNDU PUNDITU, author of commentaries “ on the MITAKSHURA, and on the institutes of VISHNOO, had before maintained the same opinion. But “ the elder commentator of the MITAKSHURA, VISWESHWURU BHUTTU, has in this instance followed the “ text of his author, in his own treatise entitled MUDUNU PARIJATU, and has supported VINYANESHWURU’s “ argument, both there and in his commentary named SOOBODHINI. Much diversity of opinion does “ indeed prevail on this question. SREEKURU maintains, that the father and mother inherit together: and “ the great majority of writers of eminence [as UPURARU and KUMULAKURU, and the authors of the “ SMRITI CHENDRIKA, MUDUNU RUTNU, Vyuvuharu Muvookhu, &c.] gives the father the preference

aside, as contrary to those texts: for the word 'mother' being placed first, in the proper form of the compound, is an exception to the general rule, in regard to the option allowed for the omission of one term and retention of the other; and further, there is a want of proof, in fixing the proper order according to the diffusion or condensation [of the parental power].

16 In default of the mother, the *uterine brother*; in default of him, *his son*. As for the declaration of VINYANESHWURU and others ¹, 'that in default of the uterine brother, those by different mothers succeed; on failure of them, the sons of the uterine brother,' it is wrong: since the term 'brother' has the force of 'whole brother,' and a secondary quality is implied by the term, 'brother by another mother;' and hence an exposition in favor of both, is contrary [to reason]. SOME however say ², upon the term 'brothers': That since: "Brothers and sisters, with sons and daughters," is one of the maxims [of PANINI], and the term 'brothers and sisters,' resolves into [the complex term] 'brothers,' by the omission of one term and retention of the other, in a compound of two species: therefore, in default of brothers, the sister [succeeds]: But it is not so, because there is a want of proof [of the correctness] of omitting one term, and retaining the other, in a compound of two species.

THE UTERINE BROTHER; then HIS SON. The doctrine of the MITAKSHURA, in favor of the half brothers, disputed.

17. The sons of a brother, also, if themselves fatherless at the time of the paternal uncle's death, provided they are capable of understanding [the use of] property, will divide the father's share with their father's other brothers, after the example: ³ "Among grandsons by different fathers, the allotment of shares is according to the fathers."

The brother's sons share with the other brothers.

"before the mother. JIMOOTU VAMUNU and RUGHONUNDUNU have adopted this doctrine. But VACHISPUTI MISRU, on the contrary, concurs with the MITAKSHURA in placing the mother before the father; being guided by an erroneous reading of the text of VISHNVOO, as is remarked in the *Yermi-trodayu*. The author of the latter work proposes to reconcile these contradictions by a personal distinction: If the mother be individually more venerable than the father, she inherits; if she be less so, the father takes the inheritance." In practice however, the question can never occur, unless the deceased had separated from his father, which is seldom if ever done.

1—Mit, 347.

2—Mit, 346 note.

3—Ante Section 4th, para 20th, See Mit 348. Reports 2d, 29.

THE GEN-
TILE RELA-
TIONS; of
whom, the
FATHER'S
MOTHER is
first, com-
ing in this
place, and
not next to
the mother

18. In default of brother's sons, succeed the *gentile relations*, [*Gotruja*] within the seventh degree, being connected by funeral oblations, [*supindu*]. The first among these is the paternal grandmother, from this text of MUNOO: ¹ "The mother also being dead, the father's mother shall take the heritage, " [on failure of brothers and nephews.]" Even though she is [here] mentioned immediately next to the mother, still she is to be entered at the end, after the brother's sons, after the manner of the entry of [the *Shraddhu* for] incidental persons at the end, [as deceased acquaintances, &c.], because the placing her in the middle [is in violation] of the rank fixed for each, as far as brother's sons. [para. 1.]

Then THE
SISTER,
CXL

19. In default of her, comes the sister; under this text of MUNOO: ² "To " the nearest *Supindu*, [male or female], after him in the third degree, the " inheritance next belongs:" and this of BRUHUSPUTI: ³ "Where many " claim the inheritance of a childless man, whether they be paternal or ma- " ternal relations, [*Sukoolya*], or more distant kinsmen [*Bandhuvu*], he who " is the nearest of them shall take the estate." And [the next rank is] her's, both from her being begotten under the brother's family name, and there being no further reservation with respect to the gentile relationship [*Gotrujutvu*]: it does not particularly specify *the same* gentile kindred. Neither is she mentioned in the text as the occasion of taking the wealth; [but as next of kin, she succeeds].

The FA-
THER'S FA-
THER, and
the HALF
BROTHER
share be-
tween them;
after them,
the PATER-
NAL GREAT
GRANDFA-

20. On failure of her, the paternal grandfather, and half brother are both to share and take it, their propinquity being equal, since the [deceased person's] own father was begotten by the former of those two, and was himself the begetter, of the latter, as well as of the deceased. The propinquity being similar, and there being a want of any other notice, however slight,

1—Chapter 9th, 217, Mit 326-346-49, Jim, Va. 194, Digest 3d, 503, Reports 1st, 198-202,

2—Chapter 9th, 197, Mit, 345-7-51, noticing our author. Jim, Va. 215-17, Digest 3d, 525. Reports 1st, 76-72,

3—Digest 3d, 532.

beyond the order of the Text, or the like, therefore, in other cases also, we must act even thus. For this reason, in default of these two, the paternal great grandfather, the father's brother, and the sons of the half brother, shall take and share it.

THE, THE
FATHER'S
BROTHER,
AND THE
SONS OF THE
HALF BRO-
THER, share
alike.

21. All the *Supindas* and the *Sumanodukus* follow, in the order of propinquity, as enumerated by MUNOO: ¹ "Now the relation of the *Supindas*, " [or men connected by the funeral cake], ceases with *the seventh* person, " [or in the sixth degree of ascent or descent,] and that of *Sumanodukus*, " or those connected by an equal oblation of water, ends only, when their " births and family names are no longer known." *The seventh*, must be understood as of him passed away.

THE SUPIN-
DAS and
SUMANODU-
KUS.

22. If no distant kinsmen [*Soduku*] exist, then come the *cognate kindred* [*Bundhoo*], who are thus specified in another SMṚITI: ² "The sons of his " own father's sister, the sons of his own mother's sister, and the sons of his " own mother's brother, must be considered as his *own* cognate kindred." " The sons of his father's paternal aunt, the sons of his father's maternal " aunt, and the sons of his father's maternal uncle, must be deemed his " *father's* cognate kindred." " The sons of his mother's paternal aunt, the " sons of his mother's maternal aunt, and the sons of his mother's maternal " uncles, must be reckoned his *mother's* cognate kindred." Here also, the order [of succession] is even the order of the text.

THE COG-
NATE KIN-
DRED, of
the decess-
ed, of his
father, and
of his
mother.
CXLI.

23. If on the other hand [it be said]: 'As the right of the wife and all ' the others, in succession to the wealth, is derived from the deceased him- ' self alone, even so, that of the cognate kindred is derived in like manner ' from him: What title then can the cognates of the father or of the mother ' [of the deceased] have to the wealth? The term 'sons of the sister of the ' father's father,' and the like, is only for the sake of shewing the connexion

An argu-
ment against
their equal
right over-
ruled.

¹—Chap. 5th, 60. Jām. Vā. 173-217, Reports 1st, 190-203.

²—Mit. 352. Digest 3d, 535. Reports 1st, 107-208.

‘ between the name and person, and does not mean a connexion with the ‘ wealth.’ [I answer]: Even without that text, if, after the example of ‘ the father’s maternal uncle, his paternal uncle,’ and the rest, in like manner also, the continuous application of that term [cognate] among the father’s and the mother’s cognates be held to exist, by conjunction [of kin through some intermediate person], we should have the absurdity of rendering unintelligible the connexion between name and person. Hence, the text is intelligible, only by the acceptance of paternal and maternal cognates, in considering that subject in the rules of succession to property. The conclusion is, that the very same applies, by the declaration of the cognate affinity, in the rules for impurity and other [mutual obligations].¹

THE PRE-
CEPTOR, PU-
PIL,

24. In default of cognate kindred, the preceptor; on failure of him, the *pupil*; by this text of APUSTUMBU²: “ If there be no male issue, the “ nearest kinsman inherits: or, in default of kindred, the preceptor; or, “ failing him, the disciple.”

AND FELLOW
STUDENT, A
SHROTRIYU,

25. In default of the pupil, the *fellow student* is the successor; in default of him, a *Shrotriyu*; from the text of GOUTUMU:³ “ Venerable priests

CXLII.

“ [*Shrotriyu*] should share the wealth of a *Brahmunu*, who leaves no issue.”

or any
Brahmunu,
if the de-
ceased were
a *Brahmunu*.

26. In default of such an one, any other *Brahmunu*, by reason of this text of KATYAYUNU:⁴ “ But in default of all those, the lawful heirs are “ such *Brahmunus*, as have read the three *Vedas*, as are pure [in body and “ mind], as have subdued their passions. Thus virtue is not lost.” And NARUDU says the same:⁵ “ In every case, the king may take the wealth “ of a subject dying without an heir, except the estate of a *Brahmunu*: for “ the property of a *Brahmunu* dying without an heir, must be given to “ *Shrotriyus*.”

1—Sec. Mit. 252. note. where our author’s doctrine is quoted.

2—2—Mit 252.

4—Muzoo Chap. 9th, 188. Mit. 252.

5—Digest 2d, 538. where it is assigned to DEVULU.

27. BRUHSPUTI: ¹ “ If *Kshutriyus, Vaishyus, or Shoodrus*, die childless, leaving neither wife nor brother, let the king take the property; for he is indeed lord of all.”

In all other cases, THE KING.

28. YANYUWULKYU ² states a distinction with regard to the estates of asceticks, and the like: “ The heirs of a hermit, of an ascetick, and of a student [*Bruhmuchari*] are, in their order, the preceptor, the virtuous pupil, and the spiritual brother, and associate in holiness.” The student, a perpetual one, for the father and the rest even are [the natural heirs] of a temporary student. The spiritual brother, one who has agreed to bear the appellation of ‘ brother.’ An associate in holiness, one appertaining to the same hermitage. ‘ Being a spiritual companion, and belonging to the same hermitage’ is a compound of nouns designating the same person, ³ [*Kurmmudharyu sumasu*]. According to VINYANESHWURU, [the succession] of preceptors and the rest, is in the inverse order. But MUDUNU prefers the direct order, from this text of VISHNOO: ⁴ “ The spiritual preceptor shall take the property of a deceased hermit.”

The heirs of hermits, asceticks, and perpetual students specified.

29. The funeral rites of the deceased, as far as the tenth day’s rites inclusive, must be performed by that person [among the heirs] who takes the estate, whoever it may be, [from the wife, downwards] even as far as the king himself. Even thus VISHNOO says: ⁵ “ He who is heir to the estate, is the giver of the funeral oblations.” This same matter has been fully explained by me in the *Shraddhu Muyookhu*, in determining the order of those entitled to perform them.

Whoever takes the estate, as heir under this above order, is bound to perform the CXLIH. funeral rites of the deceased.

1—Jim. Va. 177. Digest 3d, 538.

2—Mit. 354 Jim. Va. 323 Digest 3d, 456.

3—See note to Dutt. Mim. page 102.

4—Digest 3d, 548

5—Digest 3d, 545. SMARITI.

SECTION IX.

OF REUNION AFTER PARTITION,—[SUNSRISHTU.]

—*30*

Reunion after separation, defined.

A restriction by the MITAKSHURA to three persons, overruled.

Re-union permitted, with any former coparcener.

But the shares at a second par-

1. Now we proceed to expound the doctrine of reunited coparceners. On this subject, BRUHSPUTI defines reunion: ¹ “He who, being once separated, dwells again, through affection, with his *father*, brother, or paternal uncle, is termed reunited.” This reunion, according to the MITAKSHURA and others, can only take place with a father, brother, or paternal uncle, not with others, because no others are included in the text. But the proper sense is, that this [reunion] arises even from the joint location of the makers of the [first] partition. For the words *father*, and the rest, are merely as a part to denote the whole, of the persons who make the partition, after the example: “He measures the altar, half within, and half without:” otherwise, there would be a division of the text itself [into three]. Hence, reunion may take place with a wife, a paternal grandfather, a brother’s grandson, a paternal uncle’s son, and the rest also. “He who, being once separated [from the coheirs] dwells again [in common, is termed] reunited”: from joint location [of such an one], the sense of separated brothers, [one’s own] sons, and the like, does not result. [When two settle thus]: ‘The present, or future, wealth of us two, is common property, until we make a partition a second time,’ when there exists such a sign, either by an understanding or expressed wish, it is an union.

2. In this place, MUNOO states a distinction: ² “If brethren, once divided and living again together as parceners, make a second partition

1—Mit 367. Jim. Va. 228-168 Digest 3d, 512. Our author differs from all, in his doctrine

2—Chap. 9th. 210 Mit 359. Jim. Va. 227. Digest 3d, 476.

“ *the shares must in that case be equal*: there is not in this instance any right of primogeniture [*Jyeshtyum*].” Here, some say: ‘that, the unequal distribution being set aside by the phrase, *the shares must in that case be equal*, the prohibition of the ‘eldest son’s right’ is repeated [though contrary to rules of composition] for the sake of making it clearly understood, that although there is to be no inequality in making up the share of the eldest, yet in the distribution the shares may be even unequal, when made up of greater and lesser shares, at the time of reuniting the property.’

CXLIV.

tion must be equal. Though the contributions were unequal.

3. But since the term, ‘eldest son’s right’ [*Jyeshtyum*] and the like, is merely a declaration of the general meaning; therefore, if [the contributions to] the wealth were greater and less, still the share of each must be equal. And the same is the popular practice. Hence, as the foundation of the practice is derived from this text, any supposition of a declaration contrary thereto, is at variance with reason; for another author has said: “The body of the law, like Grammar, furnishes, for the most part, the foundations of popular customs.”

Still the shares at a second partition must be alike.

4. BRUHSPUTI: ¹ “If any one of the reunited brethren acquire wealth by science, valour, or the like [with the use of the joint stock], two shares of it must be given to him, and the rest shall have each a share.” According to MUDUNU, the meaning of the text is, that a double share being established for the acquirer, by the phrase, ‘to the acquirer, two shares’; then, in a partition among [unseparated] brethren not reunited, he gets two shares, only in what he has acquired without detriment to the father’s wealth ²; but in a [fresh] partition among reunited brethren, he gets two shares of what was acquired by him, even if at the detriment of the reunited property.

In certain gains made even with aid from the common stock, the acquirer gets a double share.

5. YANYUWULKYU ³ enumerates the order of those entitled to succeed to

The order of succes-

¹—Jim. Va. 165. Digest 3d, 551.

²—Nec Sec. 1th, para. 6.

³—Mit. 356. Jim. Va. 200. Digest 3d, 507. A literal, and connected version of this text, is required in this place, to understand clearly the succeeding argument: “Of the re-united [coheir], the re-united [coheir]: so, of the uterine brother, the uterine brother: shall either give up, or shall retain the share,” [giving it up] if a son were born of him, or [retaining it] if he died [without one].”

tion to one dying after re-union, is an exception to that of obstructed heritage, [Sec. 8th.] CXLV.

the wealth of one reunited: "As of a reunited [coheir], the reunited " [coheir], so, of the uterine brother, the uterine brother," which is an exception to the regular succession [failing male issue], of "The wife, the daughters," and the rest. ¹ Hence, this meaning results, that it is the reunited parcenership, and not the condition of the wife [the daughter], and the rest, which causes a preponderance of the right of inheriting the property of a reunited parcenur.

The doctrine of the MITAKSHURA and others, against the wife &c., controverted.

6. As for the doctrine of VINYANESHWURU, MUDUND, and others, 'That this also refers to one devoid of son, grandson, or great grandson, both from the maxim 'that the subject forming an exception be of a nature similar to that [of the rule] which is rejected,' and from the want of connexion between the terms of the former text ²: "Of one who departed for heaven leaving no male issue," and the present one: therefore, even though there exist a wife, or other unreunited near heir, of such an one dying after reunion, still, the others alone who had reunited with him, will take his estate,' it must be considered. Since [in the second case], there is a want of proof, in the connexion, if the text is to be carried on even without that rule: nor [in the first case], is the complete similarity [of the rule and exception] to be looked for, in all cases of share, but only in a few points; [as may be instanced] from the nature of a 'deceased *Supinda*,' where, in default of connexion between the term, 'leaving no male issue,' and that of, 'one who departed for heaven,' they would not find the term, 'of one deceased.' Yet it cannot be so, for that very term is found in a text of MUNOO, to be presently adduced [para: 13]: "be deprived of his allotment at the distribution, or should any one of them die:" But if connexion [of the terms] be allowed, we should, in the case of sons, some reunited with the father, and some not reunited, or of grandsons so situated with sons, have them

1—2—Section 8th, para. 1st.

sharing equally, which is a contradiction: and in the case of one having male issue, this text does not apply. ¹

7. And here again, [such connexion] is at variance with that practice, the origin of which may be demonstrated to be in the general code of Law, [para. 3]. But [should it be said], ‘ though the text be inapplicable, in ‘ the case of one having male issue, in default of such connexion; yet if ‘ there be an assemblage of sons not re-united, with brothers re-united, or ‘ the like, then the brothers and others [re-united] would obtain the wealth, ‘ not the sons or others [not re-united],’ it is not so; because in the last hemistich of the [above] text, it will be shewn to be unworthy of respect.

CXI.VI.

8. The sense of the first quarter [of the whole text]: “ Of a re-united “ [coheir], the re-united [coheir],” has an exception in the second [quarter], “ of the uterine brother,” with which the other is connected, The meaning therefore is, that, in a case embracing both whole and half brothers, all re-united together, only the re-united whole brother will take the wealth of a re-united brother deceased. The last hemistich ² is as follows: “ Shall “ give up the share, to [a son at any time] born; or shall retain it, if he “ died [without issue]:” and the sense of it is this: ‘ If the pregnancy of ‘ the wife of a deceased re-united coheir, be unascertained at the time of ‘ dividing the [re-united] property, and a son be afterwards born, the paternal uncle or other re-united [parcener] shall give the share to that son; ‘ but on failure of him, he [the uncle, &c.] himself shall take it.’

One part of the text explained by the other, to define the rights of whole with half brothers,

and those of a posthumous son with his uncles.

9. Here, the filial relation alone affords the right of taking the father's share; not the fact of production posterior to the partition, since this cannot cause such a result: besides, it creates [unnecessary] prolixity [to specify ‘ subsequently’ born], and [thirdly], would have the absurdity of denying the [known] right to a share, in the case of a son produced in another part of

THE son, though not reunited, succeeds, in preference even to the re-united uncle.

1.—In some of the copies, this sentence is not to be found in this place.

2.—Of the text with which para. 5, commenced. Mit. 367. Jin. Va. 200.

the country previous to partition, but unknown [at the time]. Therefore, to the son previously born even, though not re-united, the uncle, or other [parcener] though re-united, shall give his share. ¹

The rights
of the whole
and half
brother
severally
discussed.

10. The SAME AUTHOR ² propounds the right, of an uterine brother not re-united, and a half brother re-united, in taking shares of the wealth: “ *One of a different womb*, being again associated, may take the succession; “ not one of a different womb, *if not re-united*: but [a whole brother, *if*] “ *re-united*, obtains the property; and not [*exclusively*] the *son of a different* “ *mother*.” Here, from the terms, *one of a different womb*; *son of a different* mother, the half brother alone is not designated, but the paternal uncle, and others likewise, because there is nothing to distinguish such association: for, if otherwise, we should have the absurdity of rendering senseless the union with uncles, and the rest, already established [by the text at para. 1.] And there is a want of any other acts suitable to a state of re-union.

CXLVII.

11. *If not re-united*; this term applies to those both preceding and following it, as a lamp upon a threshold [gives light both within and without]. So, the word *re-united*, by varying the application of it, is to be understood of the whole brother, as entitled by union, both of the wealth and also of the womb. The word *if*, occurring in the former phrase, is to be understood immediately after this, as well as at the end of the text. The word *exclusively* [even, *evu*] should be supplied.

Exposition
of the text.

12. The following are the meanings of the terms of this text: ‘One of a different womb,’ that is, one of a separate womb; [such], the wife, the father, the father’s father, the half brother, the paternal uncle, and others, if they be re-united, may take the wealth. If not reunited, those of a different womb do not [succeed]. Hence, by reason of the rule respecting fitness and

¹—This seems likewise to be the doctrine of the *Soomedmini*. Cole, Mit, 858, note.

²—YANYUWOLKYU Mit. 858. Jim. Va. 201. Of the readings mentioned there, our author adopts. ‘Nanyoduryo ‘ dhumum haret, and Sunrishto manyumatrnjuh.’ The translation of some of the terms is here altered, to suit the gloss.

dissimilitude, the reunion of one of a different womb, is declared as the reason for his taking the wealth. A whole brother, termed 'reunited,' [by union of the womb], even if not reunited [by union of the wealth], will take the property. By this reasoning, the community of womb alone even, is declared a sufficient reason: So, one reunited, as possessing union of wealth; but if only born of a different mother, he will not take any thing whatever.

13. From the above this results, that, the one from his reunion, the other from his community of womb, both jointly share and take it [between them]. MUNOO² specially determines this very principle, in the right of succession among reunited persons: "Should the eldest, or youngest, of several brothers, *be deprived of* his allotment at the distribution, or should any one of them die, his share shall not be lost: but the *uterine brothers* and sisters, *and such as were reunited* after a separation, shall assemble together and divide his share equally." *Be deprived of*, by entering another order, by degradation from sin, or the like. *Uterine*, must be joined with *brothers*, in construction. *And such as were reunited*, that is, the wife, the father, the paternal grandfather, the half brother, the paternal uncle, and the rest. [para. 1].

Therefore the whole, and half brother, or any other reunited persons, share it equally.

CXLVIII.

14. On this point, PRUJAPATI states a distinction: "Whatever *concealed wealth* is brought to light, becomes the property of the reunited parceners: but *lands* and *houses*, those not reunited shall entirely take, according to their shares." *Concealed wealth*, what is capable of being hidden, by depositing in the ground, or otherwise, as gold, silver, or the like. Such, those reunited, that is, of a different womb, shall take; but landed

Fixed property, the uterine brother takes; concealed wealth and animals, he shares with those reunited.

1—Cole. Digest 1st. 9 note. "In Logick, *Umayu*, and *Fyutireku*; the first is the relation of events, of which "whenever one occurs, the other also occurs; the second is the connexion of circumstances, of which "when one occurs not, the other also does not occur."

2—Chapter 9th, 211-12. Mit. 359. Jim. Va. 210. Digest 8rd, 475.

property, the uterine brother [takes]. Kine, horses, and other [animals], the uterine and he of a different womb [shall share]. According to MUDUNU, he of a different womb alone, if reunited, will take the houses, horses, and the like; but it is not so noted in the text.

A case in the SMṚITI CHUNDRIKA explained as between uterine brothers.

15. According to the SMṚITI CHUNDRIKA: ‘But if there exist only one species of property, out of the [above sources, as] concealed wealth, land, kine, and the rest, the uterine brother alone, even not reunited, takes it.’ The proof of this must be considered. Among uterine brothers, if some of them are reunited, but other brothers not, nevertheless, those reunited alone will take the wealth, because community of womb, and reunion, exist as a double cause [of succession]. Even so GOUTUMU: “When a reunited [parcener] dies, his reunited coheir shares his estate.” and BRUHSPUTI: “Two brothers, who become reunited through affection, [after being separated] share mutually.”

CXLIX.

THE SON, succeeds in all cases,

Those reunited, before others not reunited.

16. Here, this is the refined sense: ‘A son, whether reunited with his father, or not reunited, shall obtain the entire paternal share, since the power of intercepting the right to take a share, lies in the filial relation. Among [several] sons also, when one is reunited, and the other is not, the reunited one alone [succeeds], by the text [para. 5th]: “Of a reunited [coheir], the reunited [coheir].”

And the son of one reunited, succeeds before other reunited persons.

17. In a case of reunion, between a father, son, and any other, not being his son, the son alone [succeeds], because the same has already been declared [para. 8th], by the terms: “shall either give up, or shall retain, &c.”

In other cases, THE PARENTS; and first of them THE MOTHER.

18. In an assemblage of father, brothers, paternal uncles, and others, not being sons, reunited, the parents alone [take it]. Of them again, the mother is first, and then the father, according to MUDUNU.

19. But [after them] the brother, paternal uncle, and the rest, shall even take and share it [equally]: for among them all, the state of union exists, as the cause whence their right of taking [shares] is derived.

Then THE BROTHER, PATERNAL UNCLE, &c., equally.

20. So likewise, in an assemblage of unreunited brothers, reunited paternal uncles, half brothers, and others, they even share it [in common], by reason of the two phrases [the one, para 19]: "If not reunited; but [a whole brother, if] reunited, obtains the property: and not [exclusively], the son of a different mother:" (the other, para 5): "As of a reunited [coheir] the reunited [coheir], so of the uterine brother, the uterine brother."

The brothers not reunited share with reunited uncles, &c.

21. In case of the reunion of the wife alone, she alone takes it, from the same text; "of a reunited [coheir] the reunited [coheir]."

THE WIFE, if alone reunited.

22. In an assemblage of the other persons, reunited together with her also reunited, they alone [succeed]; she does not. Moreover, in commencing the topic of reunion, both SHUNKHU and NARUDU have declared ¹: "*Among brothers*, if any one die without issue, or enter a religious order, let the rest of the brethren divide his wealth, except the wife's separate property. Let them allow a maintenance to his women for life, provided these pre-serve unsullied the bed of their lord; but if they behave otherwise the brethren may resume that allowance." "The maintenance of the daughter of such an one, is enjoined, to be made out of her father's share: if still uninitiated, she will take a share [for the purpose]; if [he died] after that, her husband shall support her."

If others were reunited she does not succeed, but must be maintained.

CL

As must the daughter, who gets also a share, if uninitiated.

23. And here, like as no necessity exists for gifts in honor of the deceased at the *Ubhyooduyeshtee* sacrifice, because there can be no doubt of the existence of materials for it, ² even so, the term, *among brothers*, is not [necessarily] required, since from the very commencement, there is a certainty of the

Argument to prove that the text is not confined to a case of brothers only.

¹—Mit. 326. Jim. Va. 177. Digest 3d, 474. Reports 2d, 129. Ante section 8th, para. 6th.

²—This passage, from the *Vedus*, is left imperfect, the *Shastrees* professing not to understand it themselves.

agency of reunited persons, in the shares, or like [succession], by death, or entry into a religious order.

Among un-reunited persons, succeeding to one re-united with other members of the family, THE MOTHER is first, then THE FATHER the ELDEST WIFE.

24. As for what SHUNKHU,¹ in proceeding to expound reunion, says :
 “ Of those also, departed for heaven without male issue, the property goes
 “ to the brothers: In default of them, both parents will take it, or *the eldest*
 “ wife,” it, according to MUDUNU, is intended to fix the order of the unre-
 united brothers, and the others, upon the death of one dying reunited,
 subsequent to the death of his paternal uncle, brother's son, or half brother,
 with whom he had previously made a reunion. And, according to THE
 SAME authority, in this case also, first is the mother, and next the father
 [para 18]. *The eldest*, that is, she who [best] preserves her duty.

The MOTHER, and DAUGHTER; after them the nearest *Supinda*.

25. In default of a wife, the sister; according as BRUHUSPUTI says²: “ His
 “ *sister* also, is entitled to take a share of it. This law concerns one who
 “ leaves no issue, nor wife, nor parent.” Some read, his *daughter*. In
 default [therefore] both of daughter and sister, the nearest *supinda*
 succeeds.



SECTION X.

OF A WOMAN'S PECULIAR PROPERTY,—[STREE DHUNU].

The sources of a woman's property are six.
 CLI.

1. MUNOO³: “ What was given *before the nuptial fire* [*Udhyuguni*]
 “ what was presented *in the bridal procession* [*Udhyavuhuniku*] what was
 “ given *in token of love* [*Preeti duttu*] and what was received by her from
 “ her brother, her mother, or her father, are denominated the *six-fold pro-*
 “ perty of a woman.”

and notless; but may be more.

2. *Six-fold*, is here used in order to prevent [its reduction to] a smaller number, a [position] which is borne out by the word *other* in the following

1—Mit. 327-339. Jim. Va. 103. Digest 3d, 473.

2—Jim. Va. 104. Digest 3d, 476.

3—Chapter 9th, 194. Mit. 300-365. Jim. Va. 70. Digest 3d, 567.

text of YANYUWUKYU¹: "What was given to a woman by the father, the mother, the husband or a brother; or received by her *at the nuptial fire* [*Udhyuguni*], or presented on her *supersession* [*Adhiveduniku*], as also any other [separate acquisition], is denominated a woman's property."

VISHNOO² likewise specifies more [than those six]: "What has been given to a woman by her father, her mother, her son, or her brother; what has been received by her *before the nuptial fire*, [*Udhyugnoopagutu*], what has been presented to her on her husband's *espousal of another wife* [*Adhiveduniku*], what has been given to her by kindred, as well as her *perquisite* [*Shoolku*], and a *gift subsequent* [*Unvadheyuku*], are a woman's separate property." Others specified.

3. In explanation of property *given before the nuptial fire* [*Udhyuguni*] and the other kinds, KATYAYUNU³ says: "What is given to women at the time of their marriage, near the nuptial fire, is celebrated by the wise as a woman's property bestowed *before the nuptial fire* [*Udhyuguniku*]." "That again, which a woman receives whilst she is conducted from her father's house [to her husband's dwelling] is instanced as the property of a woman, under the name of *gift presented in the bridal procession* [*Udhyavuhuniku*]." "What has been given to her through affection by her mother-in-law, or by her father-in-law; or has been offered to her as a token of respect, is denominated an *affectionate present* [*Presti dattu*]." "What has been received by a woman at a time subsequent to her marriage, from the family of her husband, is called a **Gift subsequent* [*Unvadheyuku*], and so is that which has been similarly received from her own family"⁴ 5.—6: "Whatever Each gift defined:
1st, before the nuptial fire.
2d. In the bridal procession.
3d, through affection.
4th, gift subsequent.
5th. The perquisite.

1—Mit. 361. Jim. Va. 73 Digest 3d, 553.

2—Jim. Va. 68 Digest 3d, 562. where for son, is read 'friend.'

3—Mit 336. Jim. Va. 70 Digest 3d, 558. Reports 1st. 64.

4—Mit 366. note.

5—Mit 367. Jim. Va. 69. and note. The MUYOOKHU follows the reading of the RUTNAKURU, "*Seukoalat tatha*."

6—Digest 3d, 563. Jim. Va. 92 and note. The reading of the Digest, as far as it agrees with the gloss of our author, is retained.

“ is received by a woman as the value of household utensils, of beasts of
 “ burden, of milch cattle, or ornaments of dress, or for works, is called her
 “ *perquisite* [*Shoolku*].” The meaning is, when the bride does not [as usual]
 obtain household utensils and the rest, then, whatever is given to her at the
 time of her marriage as the price of them, is termed her *perquisite*. What
 she receives on her *supersession* [*Adhiveduniku*] is explained by YANVU-
 WULKYU¹: “ To a woman, whose husband marries a second wife, let him
 “ give an equal sum [as a compensation] for the *supersession*, provided no
 “ separate property have been bestowed on her: but if any have been
 “ assigned, let him allot *half*.” *Half*, here means only so much as will [when
 added to her own property, make it] equal to the [prescribed] amount of
 supersession.

6th. For su-
persession.

Promise of
dowry is a
debt.

4. DEVULU: “ That which a husband has *promised* for separate proper-
 “ ty [*stree dhunu*] must be made good by his sons, even as a debt.” *Pro-*
mised, to his wife [*striyai*].

Nature and
amount of a
woman's
separate
property.

5. On the subject of giving property to women, KATYAYANA further
 declares: “ Separate property, excepting immovables, is to be given to women
 “ by their father, mother, husband, brother, and kindred, according to their
 “ means, as far as *two thousand*.” The wealth to be given excludes immo-
 vable property, and must not exceed two thousand *punus*, according to
 MUDUNU. So VYASU:² “ A present, amounting to two thousand [*punus*],
 “ at the most, may be given to a woman, out of the wealth.” And this sum,
 of *two thousand* [*punus*] at the outside, is to be given every year, so that in
 a period of many years, more would by this [means be given]. If they
 are able, even immoveable property may be given, according to the same,
 [MUDUNU].

¹—Mit 373. and note. Jim. Va. 63. Digest 2d, 17. The Manuscripts agree with the Strassburg.

²—See Chap. 32nd; for the value of the *punu*. Of the various readings of this text noticed by Jim. Va. 72, our
 author adopts: “ *Drishamukh puro dayah*.” Digest 3d, 533.

" received such gifts, is recognised in regard to that property, for it was
 " given by their kindred to soothe them, and for their maintenance." " The
 " power of women over the gifts of their affectionate kindred is ever cele-
 " brated, both in respect of donation and of sale, according to their plea-
 " sure, even in the case of immovables."

but not in
 immovable
 property
 given by
 the husband.

9. But over immoveable property given them by their husbands, they do
 not possess full power, from this text of NARUDU¹: " What has been
 " given by an affectionate husband to his wife, she may consume as she
 " pleases, when he is dead, or may give it away, excepting immovable
 " property."

CLIV.

Husbands
 and others
 do not pos-
 sess abso-
 lute power,
 over wo-
 men's pro-
 perty.

10. The non existence of absolute power, in husbands and the rest, over
 women's property, is declared by the SAME AUTHOR²: " Neither the hus-
 " band, nor the son, nor the father, nor the brothers, can assume the power
 " over a woman's property, to take it or bestow it: If any of these persons
 " by force consume the woman's property, he shall be compelled to make it
 " good with interest, and shall also incur a fine. If such person, having
 " obtained her consent, use the property amicably, he shall be required to
 " pay the principal when he becomes rich." MUNOO³: " Such kinsmen, as
 " [by any pretence] appropriate the fortunes of women during their lives, a
 " just king must punish with the severity due to thieves"⁴: " Such orna-
 " mental apparel, as women wear during the life of their husbands, the heirs
 " of the husband shall not divide among themselves: they who do so, are
 " degraded from their tribe." *Wear*, meaning, things worn by them, which
 have been given to them for the purpose by their husbands or the others.
 DEVULU⁵: " Her maintenance, ornaments, perquisite, and gain, are the

1.—Cole. on oblig. 26-233. Digest 3d, 575. Jim. Va. p. 76. Mit. p. 254., where it is attributed to VISHNOO.

2.—Jim. Va. 77. Digest 3d, 574., where it is attributed to KATYAYNU.

3.—Chapter 8th, 29.

4.—Chapter 9th, 200. Mit. 375-273. Digest 3d, 571. Reports 2d, 467.

5.—Jim. Va. 74, and the note there.

Cole. on oblig. 232. Digest 3d, 577. At the present day, where the woman's dower is high, it is put
 out at interest, which is the meaning given to GAIN, by Jim. Va. and his commentators.

“ separate property of a woman; she herself exclusively enjoys it, and her husband has no right to it unless in distress”¹: “ If he *let it go* on a false consideration, or consume it, he must repay the value to the woman with interest; but he may use the property of his wife, to relieve a distressed son.” *Maintenance*, wealth given her by her father, or the others, for the purpose of subsistence. *Gain*, interest [or profit]. *To let go*, get rid of, and give away, have all the same meaning in this place. The word *son* is here used in its general sense, for [any member of] the family. YANYUWUL-KYU²: “ A husband is not liable to make good the property of his wife, taken by him in a *famine*, or for the performance of some *religious duty*, or during illness, or while *under restraint*.” Here, by using the word *husband* alone, it is virtually declared, that woman’s private property must not be taken by any other but him, even when distressed by a *famine* or other calamity. *Religious duties*, such as are indispensable. *Under restraint*, in prison.

Though a husband [but none else] may take it under certain circumstances.

CLV.

without being compelled to restore it.

11. In some cases a husband, though unwilling, may be forced to restore it; for, says DEVULU³: “ But if the husband have a second wife, and do not shew honor to his first wife, he shall be compelled by force to restore her property, though amicably lent to him. If suitable food, raiment, and dwelling, be withheld from the woman, she may exact her own [property,] and take a share [of the estate] *with the coheirs*.” That is, *at their hands*.

A husband in some cases may be compelled, to restore it.

12. This however, relates to a virtuous wife, for a wicked one should receive no portion; and accordingly, the SAME AUTHOR says⁴: “ But a wife, who does malicious acts injurious to her husband, who acts improperly, who destroys his effects, or who takes delight in being faithless to his bed, is held unworthy of separate property.” And again⁵: “ Wealth

A wicked wife gets no separate property or portion.

1—Digest 3d, 577. 2—Cole. Mit. 374. Jim. Va. 77. Cole on oblig. 233. Digest 3d, 578. q v. Reports 1st, 371.

3—Jim. Va. 77. Digest 3d, 581., but by both it is attributed to KATYAYUWU, and joined to the foregoing texts of that author.

4—Digest 3d, 585. Ante Sec. 8th, para 6th, but the reading there is somewhat

different.

5—Mit. 329. Digest 3d, 586.

“ was conferred for the purpose of defraying sacrifices ; therefore distribute
 “ wealth among honest persons, not among women, ignorant men, or such
 “ as neglect their duties.”

The suc-
 cessors to a
 woman's
 property
 are her chil-
 dren.

13. The right of succession after a woman's decease, to that [part of her] private property which is entitled a gift subsequent, [*Unvadheyu*] is thus settled by MUNOO : ¹ “ What she received after marriage [*Unvadheyu*] from the family of her husband, and what her lord may have given her through affection [*Preetenu*] shall be inherited, even if she die in his life time, by her children [*Pruja*].” The term *children* is thus explained by the SAME AUTHOR ² : “ On the death of the mother, let all the uterine brothers, and the uterine sisters, equally *divide the maternal estate*.”

Argument
 against the
 reciprocal
 rights, of
 the sons and
 the daugh-
 ters.

14. When, from non-existence of daughters and the rest, the right of inheritance devolves even to the sons, from their connexion, then it becomes reciprocal. When this right is taken up by unmarried daughters, then [the son's succession arising from] that connexion, is at end : but, according to the MITAKSHURA ³, ‘it is not declared that the succession pertains [equally or] reciprocally to the brothers and unmarried sisters,’ Yet, it has been said by others : ‘It is declared, that there is no original connexion of sons and daughters, in property received by their mother after marriage [*Unvadheyu*], or given by her husband through affection [*Preeti duttu*].’

Among
 daughters,
 the unmar-
 ried are
 first, shar-
 ing with
 sons.

15. The distinctions in succession among daughters, are pointed out by MUNOO ⁴ : “ A woman's property goes to her children, and the daughter is a sharer with them, provided she be not given away ; but if married, she receives a mere token of respect-” Is a sharer, shares equally with the sons. Not given away, unmarried. It means, that if there be one [unmarried],

1—Chap. 9th, 195. 2—Chap. 9th, 192. Mit 370. Jim. Va. 78. Digest 3d, 587. 3—Page 371. not quite in the words of our author.

4—It is not a text of MUNOO, but of BRUHSPUTI, quoted by KOOLLOOKU in his gloss on the above text of MUNOO, and likewise in Jim. Va. 78. and Digest 3d, 588. Of the readings noticed, our author follows that of “*ubhute manu matrukum*,” and himself, in para. 25. refers it to BRUHSPUTI.

then the married [daughter] receives a mere token of respect, that is, only something very small. If there be no unmarried daughter, the share of the married daughter is equal to that of the brothers, according to the text of KATYAYUNU: ¹ "Married sisters shall share with [brothers or] kinsmen."

If none unmarried, the married ones share with sons.

16. Some trifle also must be given to the daughters of those daughters, according to the text of MUNOO ²: "Even to the daughters of those daughters something should be given, as may be fit, from the assets of their maternal grandmother, on the score of natural affection."

The daughter's daughters get something.

CLVII.

17. But all acquired by marriage [*Youtuku*] goes to the unmarried daughter alone, not to the son. So a prior text of THE SAME ³: "*Property given to the mother on her marriage [Youtuku]* is inherited by her [unmarried] daughter." *Property given, on her marriage, whatever is received by her at the time of marriage or other [ceremony] whilst seated together with her husband; for, according to MUDUNU: 'The word Youtuku, 'is, in the NIGHUNTOO, derived from their being then joined together [Yootu].'*

all property acquired by marriage, the daughter, and not the son takes.

18. In respect to woman's property, before enumerated in the texts of other sages, distinct from that acquired subsequent to marriage [*Unvadheyu*] or through their husband's affection [*Preeti dultu*], these distinctions are declared by GOUTUMU: ⁴ "*A woman's property goes to her daughters, unmarried or unprovided.*" *Unprovided, such as are destitute of wealth.*

All the property, except two kinds, goes to daughters, unmarried or unprovided.

19. The daughter by a *Brahmuni* wife, however, shall take the wealth of her step mother; thus MUNOO ⁵: "The wealth of a woman, which has been in any manner given to her by her father, let the *Brahmuni* damsel take; or, let it belong to her offspring." By giving the particle *or* the sense of '*and*,' we have it, '*and shall be shared by [her issue].'* Some say, that the word *Brahmuni* is used to denote any girl of equal or superior cast, but the proof of this must be well examined.

A distinction when wives of different class exist.

¹—Digest 3d, 594.
and notes.

²—Chap. 9th, 198. Mit. 370. Digest 3d, 600.
⁴—Ante, Sec. 6th, para. 12. Reports 2d, 418.

³—Chap. 9th, 131 Jim. Va. 82
⁵—Chap. 9th, 198. Mit. 372. Jim. Va. 88.

In default of daughters, their issue succeeds.

20. If there be no daughters, then the issue of those daughters succeeds, according to the text of NARUDU¹: "Let daughters divide their mother's wealth; or, on failure of daughters, *their* male issue [*tud unvuyu*]."

Distribution among daughters, and among their sons, is according to the mothers.

21. A distribution among daughters by different mothers, as well as among the different daughter's sons, to be just, must be apportioned after the example of that prescribed for the sons of different fathers, where the partition is according to their father's shares [not to the number of the sons of each father].²

The issue of the daughters CLVIII, succeeds on their default.

22. However, YANYUWULKYU says:³ "The daughters share *the residue* of their mother's property, *after payment of her debts*, and the issue succeeds in their default." And here again, some say, the word *issue* [*Unvuyu*], has reference to the offspring of the daughters; whilst others hold, that if she leave no daughter, even her sons may take it, since the word *tud*⁴ in the text of NARUDU above, distinctly points out the mother alone; and this [first] doctrine agrees with custom. *The residue after payment of her debts*; on this subject those acquainted with the ancient law have declared, that the sons alone must take the property, [if only] equal to, or less than, the amount of debt.

Sons take the property, if the debts are equal to it, or more.

On failure of daughters and their issue, sons, and their issue.

23. If daughters or the rest do not exist, the sons, grandsons, and the rest must take it, for thus it is declared by KATVAYUNU⁵: "But on failure of daughters, the inheritance belongs to the son."

The right of the daughters and their issue, confined to the six kinds of property.

24. This right of inheritance, of daughters and the rest, in the mother's property, exists only in wealth given before the nuptial fire [*Udhyuguni*], and in the bridal procession, [*Udhyavuhuniku*], and the other [kinds] above recorded in the texts [paras. 1—2—3.] specifying woman's property; for, if

1—Mit 370 and note. Jim. Va. 82. In the former, it is translated "their male issue," in the latter, "her male issue," our author prefers the former. See para. 28.

2—See Section 4th, para. 20.

3—Mit 266-7-368. Jim. Va. 82.

4—Our compilers read *tuda*, following the modern Benares copy but it is evidently wrong, the whole argument running on the word *tud* as a pronoun.

5—Jim. Va. 82, Digest 3d, 591.

relating to all wealth in which their mother has any property, it would go to set aside those texts [limiting it to six].

25. From this we must understand, that the often repeated term '*woman's property*,' which BRUHUSPATI, GOUTUMU, and the rest, have adopted; for example: "*A woman's property goes to her children*:" [para. 15], "*A woman's property goes to her daughters*" [para. 18], and the like, relates even to the texts above delivered. As many again as, even without actually keeping the phrase '*woman's property*,' have parallel expressions, such as, "*divide the maternal estate*" [MUNOO, para. 13], or the like, all those in like manner have reference to the same texts, by a combination of objects having the same origin.

The term '*woman's property*' confined to the preceding texts.

26. However, the text of YANYUWULKYU: ¹ "Let sons divide equally both the effects and the debts, after [the demise of] their two parents:" relates to [what is] acquired by the act of partition and the like, with the exception of that declared in the above texts [as woman's property]. From this it is clear, that, if there be daughters, the sons or other heirs even succeed to the mother's estate, distinct from that part before described [as woman's property].

Woman's property is an exception, to the general CLIX. right of sons.

27. Again, if there be no offspring of either sex, the further [succession] is declared by YANYUWULKYU, ² referring to the above mentioned woman's property: "Her kinsmen [*Bandhuva*] take it, if she die without issue."

On default of offspring, the kinsmen succeed.

28. THE SAME AUTHOR expounds the succession of kindred [*Bandhuvu*] to be according to the different kinds of marriage ³: "The property of a childless woman married in the form denominated *Brahma*, or in any of the other four [unblamed modes of marriage], goes to her husband: but if

Their right depends on the particular form by which the woman was married.

¹—Mit 263. Jim. Va. 55. The last hemistich of this text was quoted above, para. 23. See Section 4th, para. 17.

²—Mit 367. Jim. Va. 91. Digest 3d, 613.

³—Mit 368. Jim. Va. 88. Digest 3d, 696. These rites are explained, Digest 3d, 694.

“ she leave progeny, it will go to her daughters ; and in other forms of marriage [as the *Asooru* &c.] it goes to her father, [and mother, on failure of her own issue].” [In the one case], if there be no husband, then the nearest to her in his [*tut*] own family takes it; and [in the other case], if her father do not exist, the nearest to her in [her] father's family succeeds, [for the law that]: “To the nearest *supindu*, the inheritance next belongs,” as declared by Munoo¹ denotes, that the right of inheriting her wealth, is derived even from nearness of kin to the deceased [female] under discussion—And, though the MITAKSHURA² holds, ‘that on failure of the husband, ‘it goes to his *tut* nearest kinsmen [*supindu*] allied by funeral oblations ;’ and, ‘on failure of the father, then to his [*tut*] nearest *supindas* ;’ yet, from the context it may be demonstrated, that *her* nearest relations are his nearest relations ; and [the pronoun *tut* being used in the common gender], it allows of our expounding the passage ‘those nearest to him, through her, in his own family :’ for the expressions are of similar import.

The effect of these rites is different in CLX. the different classes.

29. *In the Brahmū or in any of the other four*, relates to the *Brahminical* class, on account of these [rites] being the only ones lawful in respect to them. But as the *Gandhurvu* rite is also lawful to the *Kshutriyu* class and the rest, so also, the wealth of her who has been married according to that form devolves to her husband alone. And so Munoo³: “It is ordained, that the property of a woman, married by the ceremonies called “*Brahmu*, *Daivu*, *Aishu*, *Gandhurvu*, or *Prajaputyu*, shall go to her husband, if she die without issue.” “But her wealth, given on the marriage “called *Asooru*, or on either of the two others [*Paishachu* and *Rakshusu*] is “ordained, on her death without issue, to become the property of her “mother and her father.”

1—Chap. 9th, 187. Mit. 347. Jim. Va. 217. Ante Section 8th, para, 19.

2—Page 368. The correctness of this version is doubtful.

3.—Chapter 9th, 196-7 Jim. Va. 87. Digest 3d, 697-8.

30. On failure of the husband of a deceased woman, if married according to the *Brahmu* or other [four] forms; or of her parents, if married according to the *Asooru* or other two forms, the heirs to the *woman's property*, as expounded above, are thus pointed out by *BRUHUSPUTI*:¹ "The mother's sister; the maternal uncle's wife; the paternal uncle's wife; the father's sister; the mother-in-law, and the wife of an elder brother, are pronounced similar to mothers. If they leave no son born in lawful wedlock, nor daughter's son, nor his son, then the sister's son and the rest shall take their property." Here must be understood, 'on failure both of the daughter, and also of her daughter,' because only on failure of them does the right of inheritance pertain to the son born in wedlock, or to the daughter's son.

Heirs of a woman on failure of her husband, and parents, defined.

31. In respect of property given by the kindred [*Bundhoo*] at an *Asooru* marriage or the like, *KATYAYONU* says:² "That which has been given to her by her kindred, goes, on failure of kindred, to her son."

The son in that case inherits presents from kindred,

32. But on the subject of the perquisite, *GOUTUMU* holds:³ "The sister's perquisite belongs to the uterine brothers; after [the death of] the mother."

And the brothers get the perquisite,

33. But what *SHUNKHU* says⁴: "The lover [may take back] his nuptial present [on the death of his betrothed mistress]," must be understood of one, dying previous to the celebration of the marriage. Here it is further remarked by *YANYUWULKYU*:⁵ "If she die [after troth plighted], let the bridegroom take back the gifts which he had presented; paying however, the charges on both sides." The meaning is, that the husband may take back, if his bride be dead, what remains of the perquisite previously given, after calculating the expences, incurred by himself and by her father.

Gifts to be restored to the bridegroom,

CLXI, When the bride dies before marriage, deducting charges,

1—Jim. Va. 96. Digest 3-617. In the translation of Jim. Va, the maternal uncle is put for his wife, and the paternal uncle's wife is not noticed. The present version will be found in the Digest 3d, 618. except that *his* son is there explained, the son's son.

2—Jim, Va. 96. Digest 3d, 594-615. In both, it is 'Ausband,' instead of son.

3—Mit. 369. Jim, Va. 94. Digest 3d, 614. All the authorities seem in favor of this version against Jimootu Vahana.

4—Digest 3d, 614.

5—Mit 378.

Presents
by the ma-
ternal kin-
dred, be-
long to the
brothers of
a deceased
damsel,

34. On some points BOUDDHAYUNU records a distinction: ¹ "The wealth of a deceased damsel, let the uterine brothers themselves take. " On failure of them, it shall belong to the mother; or if she be dead, to " the father." Those skilled in the ancient law have declared, that this relates to ornaments or the like, presented by the maternal grandfather and the rest, at the time of betrothal, to a girl [who afterwards] dies before completion of the marriage. Here ends the subject of woman's property.



SECTION XI.

OF EXCLUSION FROM INHERITANCE,—[UNUNSHU].

Persons ex-
cluded from
inheritance;
must be
maintained,

1. YANYUWULKYU says: ² " An impotent person, an outcast and *his issue*; one lame, a madman, an idiot, a blind man, and a person afflicted " with an incurable disease, as well as others [similarly disqualified], must " be maintained, excluding them, however, from participation." *His issue*, means the offspring of an outcast.

but may re-
cover their
rights,

2. If, after division, virility or the other [absent qualification] be regained, by medicine or other means, the person will then receive his share, like as a son born after partition [does]. ³

Disinherit-
ed persons
enumerat-
ed,

3. MUNOO says: ⁴ " Impotent persons and outcasts; persons born " blind or deaf; madmen, idiots, the dumb, and such as *have lost a sense* " [or limb, *nirindriya*], are excluded from a share of the heritage." *Have lost a sense*, deprived of the nose [or smell,] or the like. NARUDU also declares: ⁵ " An enemy to his father, an outcast, an impotent person, and one

1—Mit 374. Jim. Va. 90. Digest 3d, 612.

2—Mit 360 Jim. Va. 103, Digest 3d, 321, Reports 1st, 412.

3—Ante Sec. 4th, para. 85.

4—Chap. 9th, 201. Mit, 361, The term *Nirindriya* is explained, in Jim. Va.

103 note 7. Reports 1st, 78.

5—Mit 361 Jim. Va. 104 Digest 3d, 303. Reports 1st, 78. Our

author adopts none of the readings noticed by Jim. Va. but takes that of SHUNZHU's text below.

" *formally expelled* (*Upuyatritu*), take no shares of the inheritance, even though they be legitimate: much less if they be sons of the wife by an appointed kinsman." ¹: " One afflicted with an obstinate or an agonizing disease, an idiot; one insane, blind, or lame, must be maintained by the family, but their sons take the shares [of their parents."]

CLXII.

4. *Formally expelled*, one turned out by his kinsmen with the ceremony of kicking down a water pot or the like, for high treason [*Rajdrohu*] or a similar crime, according to *MUDUNU*. It properly applies to one who goes across the sea in a vessel or the like, to another quarter of the globe, for the sake of a livelihood; [for] ²: " Communion is not permitted with a *Brahmun* [*Dvij*] who has passed the sea in a ship, even though he have performed penance for it;" therefore, connexion with such an one in this age of the world, is reprehended. And no form is laid down for performing the ceremony of kicking down the water pot, or for expulsion for high treason. *SHUNKHU* and *LIKHITU* ³: " The heritable right of him who has been formally degraded [*Upuyatritu*], and his competence to offer oblations of food and libations of water, are extinct."

Explanation
of the term
'formally
expelled,'

Another re-
sult of de-
gradation,

5. *VUSISHTHU* ⁴: " They who have entered into another order, are debarred from shares." Here are meant the perpetual student, the hermit, and the ascetic. *KATYAYUNU* ⁵ " But the son of a woman married in irregular order, as well as he who is produced through a kinsman [*Sugotru*], and an apostate from a religious order, never obtain the inheritance."

Persons en-
tering an-
other order
debarred
from shares
and sons of
women mar-
ried in irre-
gular order,

6. [Produced] *through a kinsman*, means one born of a woman married to one of her own [*Sugotru*] relations. *The son of a woman married in irregular order*, means, according to some, the *Kshetruju*, *Kaneenu*, and other sons. But, when the marriage of a younger daughter has been celebrated

Explanation
of that term,

1—Digest 3d, 303.

2—General note to *MUNOO*, *SMRITI* (3).

3—Digest 3rd, 300. *Jim. Va.* 101, which attributes it to *APUSTUMBU*.

4—Mit. 355-361, Digest 3rd, 327.

5—*Jim. Va.* 114, and notes. Digest 3rd, 325-6.

whilst her eldest sister is still unmarried, they are then both said to be 'out of their order;' and this is the proper application of the term [*Ukruma*.]

If he be of the same class as his father, his qualification for inheriting is declared by the SAME AUTHOR ¹: " But the son of a woman married in irregular order

CLXIII.
If of the same class as the father, the son may inherit.

" may be heir, provided he belong to the same tribe with his father: and so

" may the son of a man, belonging to a different [but superior] tribe, by a

" woman espoused in the regular gradation."

Sons by a woman of higher class do not inherit.

7. Also, if sons be begotten by a husband on a wife sprung from a higher class, they shall not take the inheritance, for thus says the SAME AUTHOR: ²

" The son of a woman married to a man of inferior tribe, is not heir to the estate. Food and raiment for life are considered to be due to him by his kinsmen."

A vicious son does not inherit, if other sons exist,

8. If there be other sons endowed with good qualities, the inheritance is not to be taken by a vicious one; for says MUNOO ³: " All those brothers, who are addicted to any vice, lose their title to the inheritance."

BRUHUSPUTI ⁴: " Though born of a woman equal in class, a son destitute of virtue is unworthy of the paternal wealth; it is declared to belong to those kinsmen who offer funeral oblations to the deceased, and are of virtuous conduct." " A son redeems his father from debt to superior or inferior beings; consequently there is no use for one who acts otherwise."

Persons excluded from inheritance, must be maintained, as long as they live.

9. But all those excluded from participation must be maintained during the rest of their lives, by those who get the estate, from this text of MUNOO ⁵:

" But it is fit, that a wise man should give all of them food and raiment, without stint, to the best of his power: for he who gives it not, shall be

1—2—Digest 3d, 326, Jim, Va, 105, Of the readings mentioned, our author has, '*grassackhadunum utyuntum*.'

3—Chapter 9th, 214, Jim, Va, 102 Digest 3rd, 209.

4—Jim, Va, 102, Digest 3d, 301--2, where the

term *Shrettriya* is applied to the kinsmen themselves, as an illustration merely.

5—Chapter 9th, 202. Mit 362. Reports 1st, 412.

“deemed an outcast.” (*Without stint*, signifies ‘as long as they live,’) as well as from the foregoing one of YANYUWULKYU [para: 1]: “Those excluded from inheritance must still be maintained.”

10. Those who have entered into another order, and outcasts, as well as their respective sons, are not to be maintained. Thus VUSISHTHU says: “They who have entered into another order, are debarred from shares; [para. 5]: as also an impotent man, a madman, and an outcast; but let the impotent and madman (receive) *a maintenance*.” Here, the maintenance of two only being mentioned, is meant as an indication that the others are excluded. DEVULU: ¹ “When the father is dead [as well as in his life time], an impotent man, a leper, a madman, an idiot; a blind man, an outcast, the offspring of an outcast, and a person fraudulently *wearing the token* [of religious mendicity], are not competent to share the heritage: food and raiment should be given to them, excepting the outcast.” *Wearing the token*, assuming a prohibited mark [*lingu*]. BOUDDHAYUNU ²: “Let the coheirs support with food and apparel those who are incapable of business, as well as the blind, idiots, impotent persons, those afflicted with disease and calamity, and others who are incompetent to the performance of duties, excepting however the outcast and his issue.” Even those degraded from the life of an ascetic, as well as their sons, are neither of them to be maintained, according to MUDUNU and others.

Except those entering another order, outcasts, and their sons,

CLXIV.

11. But the blameless sons, even, of one from these causes disinherited, shall take a share, according to the text of VISHNOO ³: “The legitimate sons, even of these, [are sharers of the patrimony]; but not the sons born to a degraded man after the commission of the act which caused his degradation, nor those who are procreated [on a woman of a higher class, that is]

The qualified sons of a disinherited man, may inherit; with certain exceptions,

¹—Jim. Va. 103. Digest 3d, 304.

²—Jim. Va. 104 Digest 3d, 316.

³—Digest, 3rd. 315.

“ in the inverse order of the classes: their sons do not participate, even in
 “ the property left by the paternal grandfather:” and this of YANYU-
 WULKYU ¹: “ But their sons, whether legitimate, or the offspring of the
 “ wife by a kinsman, [*Kshetruju*] are entitled to allotments, if free from similar
 “ defects.”

Special rule
 for their
 wives and
 daughters.

CLXV,

12. YANYUWULKYU ² delivers a special rule concerning the daughters
 and wives of these: “ Their daughters must be maintained likewise, until
 “ they are provided with husbands.” “ Their childless wives, conducting
 “ themselves aright, must be supported; but such as are *unchaste*, should be
 “ expelled: and so indeed should those who are *perverse*,” If she be
unchaste, a woman must be turned out of doors, and without a maintenance.
 A *perverse* woman also should be turned out of doors, but a maintenance
 must be provided for her, according to Mudunu, and others.

1—Mit 363. Jim. Va. 107. Digest 3rd, 322. Reports 2nd, 669, properly applying to paras. 1-2, but omitted.

2—Mit, 363. Jim. Va. 107. Digest 3rd, 342. Reports, 1st, 412.

CHAPTER V.

NON PAYMENT OF DEBTS,—[*RUNADANU*].

—*35*—

SECTION I.

OF LOANS IN GENERAL.

1. *BRUHUSPUTI*¹ explains, on this subject, the rules for regulating a creditor's conduct, or transactions: "A prudent lender should always deliver the thing lent, on receiving a *pledge* [*Bundhuku*] of adequate value, either to be used by him, or merely kept in his hands; or with a sufficient *surety* [*Lugnuku*], and either with a written agreement, or before credible witnesses." A *pledge*, such as this, when the pawnee promises, 'As long as I fail to clear off thy debt, so long will I not alienate, either in gift, sale, mortgage or other mode, this house, field, or other [pledge].' *Surety*, one standing in the debtor's room. THE SAME AUTHOR says:² "That loan [*Runu*] which, increased to four times or eight times the principal, is [thus] received back, without apprehension of sin, from an abject or distressed person, is called a loan on interest [*kooscedu*]." Loans. CLXVI.

2. *KATYAYUNU*:³ "Stipulated interest [*karitu*] is that which has been specially [and freely] promised by the debtor, in a time of extreme distress, above the allowed rate." "When any one pays interest *from time to time*, it is recorded as *Sikhaviddhi* or hair interest." *From time to time*, means interest is to be paid by the day, month, or year. Interest on them.

3. *YANYUWULKYU*⁴: "An eightieth part [of the principal] is the month- The rates of it.

1—Digest 1st, 10. Strange's Elements 1st, 276-306. *Dhanik*, *Oottumurnik*—a lender, obligor, creditor. *Runik*, *Udhumurnik*,—the borrower, obligee, debtor, 2—Digest 1st, 11.

3—Digest 1st, 50. Colebrooke on Oblig. 64. For interest, see Strange, 1st, 395-6.

4—Digest 1st, 42.

“ ly interest, when a pledge has been delivered : *otherwise*, it may be, in
 “ the direct order of the classes, two, three, four, or five in the hundred.”
Otherwise; if there be no pledge; for VYASU¹ says: “ Monthly interest is
 “ declared to be an eightieth part of the principal, if a pledge be given; a
 “ sixtieth part is to be paid, if there be [only] a surety; and if there be
 “ neither pledge nor surety, two in the hundred [may be taken from a
 “ debtor of the sacerdotal class.]” YANYUWULKYU² ordains: “ All bor-
 “ rowers, who travel through vast forests, may pay ten, and such as traverse
 CLXVII. “ the ocean, twenty in the hundred :” They must pay it, as shewn by the
 last half of the couplet: “ To lenders of all classes [according to circum-
 “ stances]; or whatever interest has been stipulated by them [as the price of
 “ the risk to the lender].”

When due
without sti-
pulation.

4. VISHNOO says: “ In all the classes, if a person borrow money under
 “ agreement, as, ‘ I will repay it to-morrow,’ but should for his own profit
 “ not pay it, the lender shall receive interest from after [the term fixed].”
 The interest on a thing lent for use [*Yachitu*], is thus declared by KATYA-
 YUNU:⁴ “ He who, having received a chattel lent for use, goes to a foreign
 “ country without restoring it, must pay interest, according to the value of
 “ it, after one year.”—⁴: “ Though a loan be made [expressly] without
 “ interest [*Ooddharu*], yet, if the debtor pay not the sum lent after demand,
 “ but [fraudulently] go to another country, that sum shall carry interest after
 “ a lapse of three months.”—⁵: “ A debtor, who, even residing in his own
 “ country, pays not [the debt] after more demands than one, shall be forced,
 “ however unwilling, to pay interest on it, though not stipulated, [after the
 “ lapse of one year].” And NARUDU⁶ says: “ There shall be no interest,
 “ without a special agreement, on valuable things lent through friendship

1—Digest 1st, page 86 and 37, for the different readings.

2—Digest 1st, page 40. Strange 1st, 286.

3—Digest 1st, page 104. where it is ‘ three seasons.’

4—Digest 1st, 97.

5—Digest 1st, 99-100.

6—Digest 1st, 104.

" [for use, not for consumption]; but, even without agreement, property so lent bears interest after half a year." KATYAYUNU¹: " What has been amicably lent for use, shall bear no interest until it be demanded back; but if, on demand, it be not restored, it shall bear interest [on its true value] at the rate of five in the hundred."—²: " Should a man, having bought a marketable commodity, [fraudulently] go to another country, without paying the price of it, that price shall bear interest after three seasons [or six months]." "[Even without a journey to a foreign country, a deposit, the balance of interest, a commodity sold, and the price of a commodity purchased, not being paid [or delivered] after demand, shall bear interest, at the rate of five in the hundred [if the debtor be a *Shoodru*]."

5. NARUDU³ says: " A commodity, the price [of a commodity], wages, a deposit, and [the like]; a fine [to the king], a thing clandestinely taken [without a design to steal it], a thing idly promised, and a *stake played for*, carry no interest [before demand], *without a special agreement*." A *stake played for*, the object played for with dice. *Without special agreement*, not positively declared. YANYUWULKYU:⁴ " Property lent, which the creditor will not receive back, when tendered, must be deposited with a third person, and bears no interest afterwards." Stipulation of it when necessary. CLXVIII.

6. BRUHUSPUTI:⁵ " On the precious metals [or gems], the interest may make the debt double; on clothes and inferior metals, treble; on grain, quadruple; so on *fruit, beasts of burden, and wool or hair*." *Fruit*, flowers, roots, fruits &c. *Beasts of burden*, bullocks, &c. *Wool*, that of sheep; and the hair of the *Chumri* [*Bos Grunniens*] and other [animals of that species.] But, this of MUXOO:⁶ " Interest on grain, on fruit, on wool Accumulation by interest specified.

1—Digest 1st, 99.

2—Digest 1st, 101.

3—Digest 1st, 124.

4—Digest 1st, 133.

5—Digest 1st, 112.

6—Chap. 8th, v. 161. Digest 1st, 119.

“ or hair, on beasts of burden, [lent to be paid in the same kind of equal value,] must not be more than enough to make the debt quintuple,” must be understood as a prohibition of sixfold, or higher increase. KATYAYNU says: ¹ “ For gems, pearls and coral; for gold and silver, for cloth made of [cotton] the produce of fruit, or made of silk, or made of wool or hair, the interest stops when it doubles the debt.” Of silk, that is, made from the produce of insects, and clothes made from the hair of the *chumri* and other animals. VUSISHTHU: “ Interest on copper, iron, queen’s metal, prince’s metal, tin, and also on lead, makes the debt three fold, only if much time have elapsed.” VYASU: “ Interest increasing the debt sixfold, is declared allowable on vegetables, cotton, and seeds.” KATYAYNU: ² “ For all sorts of oil and spirituous liquors, for the different kinds of clarified butter, for molasses, and salt, the interest is held legal, though [with the principal], the debt be made octuple.” VISHNOO: ³ “ On precious metals, [or gems], the highest interest shall make the debt double; on cloth, treble; on grain, quadruple; [on fluids, octuple]; on female slaves or cattle, the offspring shall be taken as interest.” So: ⁴ “ [Rare] flowers, roots, and fruit; what is sold by weight [except gold and the like], may make the debt eight fold.”

Explanation.

7. NARUDU: ⁵ “ Of interest on loans, this is the *universal* [and highest rule]; but the rate customary in the country where the debt was contracted may be different.” *Universal*, every where current; and this relates only to a debt doubled, or more than doubled, by interest, by the first transaction; for if at a different time a fresh speculation be entered into, with a different person, or even with the same, under a chance of profit or loss, in such case, even higher interest may accrue. So also MUNOO ⁶: “ Interest on money received at once, [not month by month, or day by day, as it ought,]

¹—Digest 1st, 409.

²—Digest 1st, 121.

³—Digest 1st, 113.

⁴—Digest 1st, 114. VUSISHTHU.

⁵—Digest 1st, 53.

⁶—Chap. 8th, v. 151. The last hemistich was quoted above.

" must never be more than enough to double the debt, [that is, more than the amount of the principal paid at the same time]." But in any one case where it is realized [by degrees], or at various times also, more than this legal or allowable interest may be levied, according to VINYAKESMWURU and other authorities. ¹

SECTION II.

OF PLEDGES,—[ADHI].

1. BRUHUSPUTI: ² " A pledge [*Adhi*] is called *bundhu*, and is declared to be divisible into four parts: Moveable [or personal]; and fixed, [or real]; for custody only [*gopyu*]; and for use [*bhogyu*]." NARUDU: ³ " That to which a [secondary] title is given, is a pledge. It has two forms, to be released at a fixed time, or to be retained until payment be tendered." Pledges.

2. HARELTU: " In the same state as the pledge has been deposited, even so let the pawnee take care of it: otherwise he shall lose his interest; or in case of its being *damaged*, he shall pay the value of it." Rules for their custody.
Damaged, that is, if the pledge be destroyed. YANYUWULKYU: ⁴ " If a pledge for custody [*gopyu*] be used, there shall be no interest, nor, if a pledge for use [*bhogyu*] be *damaged*:" meaning, *damaged* so as to be unfit for use. CLXX.
 KATYAYUNU: ⁵ " He who employs on work an unwilling [slave or other living] pledge, without the assent [of the owner], shall be compelled to pay the value of the work, or shall receive no interest on his loan." *Employs on work*, makes use of him. *Value of the work*, the hire [of the person &c. employed].

¹—Cole. on Oblig. 89.

²—Digest 1st, 140. q. v.

³—Digest 1st, 142.

⁴—Digest 1st, 145. Strange's Elem. 1st, 268.

⁵—Digest 1st, 151.

Damage by
the pawnee.

3. YANYUWULKYU¹: "A pledge *spoiled*, [lost], or destroyed, unless by " the act of God or the king, shall be *made good* [by the creditor]." *Spoiled*, which has incurred damage. *Made good*, by being restored equal to its former state. BRUHUSPUTI: ² "Any pledge, being used, and wholly spoiled " ed [by the fault of the pledgee], the principal debt shall be lost." In case of a pledge being damaged, its value must be paid for, as VYASU says ³: "If gold, or other (precious) thing, shall be pledged, and lost by the negligence of the receiver, that creditor, on the principal and interest of his " loan being paid, shall be forced to pay the price of the pledge." NARADU: ⁴ "If a pledge be lost [and the creditor do not replace it], the principal " itself shall be forfeited; unless the loss was caused [without his fault] by " the act of God or of the king." MUNOO: ⁵ "[The pawnee] must satisfy " the pawner, [if the pledge be spoiled or worn out], by paying him the original price of it; otherwise, he commits a theft of the pawn."

When to be
renewed or
made good
by the pawner.

CLXXI.

4. BRUHUSPUTI: ⁶ "If a pledge be destroyed by the act of God or the " king, the creditor shall either obtain another pledge, or receive the sum " [lent] together with interest." VYASU⁷ says: "If the pledge be destroyed by the act of God or the king, no fault is by any means imputable " to the creditor." KATYAYUNU: ⁸ "When a pledge becomes unfit for " use, or perishes, without any fault on the part of the creditor, the debtor " shall be compelled to deliver another pledge; [for], he is not exonerated " from the debt." YANYUWULKYU⁹ also declares: "By the acceptance " [or actual possession] of a pledge, [the] validity [of the contract] is [maintained]. If it be spoiled, when carefully kept, another chattel must be " pledged, or the creditor must receive the amount [of principal and interest]."

1—Digest 1st, 145. See post. Chap. 6th paras. 5—7. 5—Chap. 8th, v. 144, Digest 1st, 150. Strange 1st, 288.

2—Digest 1st, 149. Strange 1st, 283-288.

6—Digest 1st, 150.

3—Digest 1st, 148.

7—Digest 1st, 160.

4—Digest 1st, 145.

8—0—Digest 1st, 161. Strange's Elem. 1st, 291.

5. NARUDU¹ says: " Pledges [*Adhi*] are declared to be of two sorts, " immoveable and moveable; both are valid when there is actual enjoy- " ment, and not otherwise." VUSISHTHU also says: " When more Deeds " than one have been drawn up, at the very same time, in a case of pledge, " he who has first got possession must be held to have the strongest pledge." THE SAME AUTHOR adds: " If two creditors should, on the very same " day, come with a view to take possession of their pledge, it must then be " equally divided, and possessed by them; this is certain." KATYAYUNU:² " Should a man hypothecate the same thing to two creditors, what must be " decided? The first hypothecation shall be established, and the debtor " shall be punished as for theft."

Rules in
cases of re-
bailment.

6. YANYUWULKYU³ says: " That pledge is totally lost, which the " pawnor fails to redeem when the principal is doubled. That fixed with " a term for redemption, is lost on the expiration of the term: but an usu- " fructuary pledge is never destroyed." But BRUHUSPUTI⁴ declares: " Gold being doubled, and the stipulated period having expired, the creditor " becomes owner of the pledge, after the lapse of fourteen days." VYASU:⁵ " After giving notice to the debtor's family, a pledge for custody may be " used when the principal is doubled, and so may a pledge for a limited " period, when that period is expired."

Lapse of
the term.

CLXXII.

7. BRUHUSPUTI⁶: " When the debt is doubled by the interest, and the " debtor is either dead, or has absconded, the creditor may attach his " [pledge or the debtor's] chattel, and sell it before witnesses." YANYU-
WULKYU:⁷ " A debtor shall be compelled to pay, with interest, a debt " contracted on a *peculiar pledge*, [*Churitrum*] and he shall be compelled to " re-pay twofold, a debt contracted on a chattel [of small value] *delivered*

1—It is attributed to VYASU in the Digest 1st, 206.
Reports 1st, 304. 3d, 134. Strange 1st, 287-289. —

2—Digest 1st, 209. For hypothecation, see Strange's
Elem. 1st, 388-39. Essay on Bailments p. 83-4.

3—Digest 1st, 183. Reports 1st, 303.

4—Digest 1st, 186, where the text is attributed to
VYASU. Reports 1st, 303.

5—Digest 1st, 197.

6—Digest 1st, 199. Strange's Elem. 1st, 288.

7—Digest 1st, 203, from which the present trans-
lation deviates to suit the gloss.

"as an earnest [of purchase or sale.]" When a borrower, from his confidence in the lender, deposits with him a valuable pledge for a small consideration, or where the lender, entertaining a like confidence in the borrower, advances a large sum on a pledge of small value, this will be a *peculiar pledge*; or the word *Churitrum* may signify, the pledge of good actions, as, of the reward for ablution in the Ganges, or the like. And in both these species, denominated *peculiar pledge*, even if the thing be doubled by interest, it is not forfeited. Even if the debt be doubled, it must be paid, but the pledge is not forfeited. *Delivered as an earnest*, means that when a debt contracted on such grounds is doubled with interest, the earnest so pledged is not forfeited.

Redemp-
tion of
mortgage.

8. THE SAME AUTHOR¹ says: "To the debtor who comes to redeem his pledge, the creditor shall restore it, or be punished as a thief; and if the creditor be [dead, or] absent, the debtor may pay the debt to his kinsmen, and shall take back his pledge."² "Or appraised at the value it then bears, it may remain there [with the creditor], exempt from interest." If the creditor [*Gottumurnu*] be not present, [the debtor] may place the amount of his debt, with its interest, in the hands of some other person of his creditors's family, and take back his pledge. Or if he wish to sell the pledge, from desire of realizing its value, let him have it valued at the time, and leave it in deposit [with his creditor, but] without interest [considering it a debt discharged]. This is the meaning. **BRUHUS-CLXXIII. PUTI:**³ "When land or other [immoveable property] has been enjoyed, and more [than the principal debt] has accrued therefrom, then, the principal and interest having been realized, the debtor shall obtain his pledge." **YANYUWULKYU:** "Whenever a debt under mortgage has become doubled by interest, then the pledge shall certainly be returned, whenever double the sum lent has been received."

¹—Digest 1st, 160.

²—Digest 1st, 171.

³—Digest 1st, 177.

SECTION III.

OF SURETIES,—[PRUTIBHOO].

1 Now *surety* is of three kinds, according to YANYUWULKYU,¹ who Sureties.
 says: "Suretiship is ordained for appearance, for *trust*, and for payment."
Trust here means,—Raising of confidence, by saying 'this man is true.'
 BRUHUSPUTI² again, enumerates four kinds of sureties, [of whom]: "The
 "first says, 'I will point him out;' the second, 'this man is trust-wor-
 "thy;' the third, 'I am the payer of this money;' the fourth, 'I will cause
 "to give it." Which last means, 'I will hereafter make [the debtor] pay
 'this debt' KATYAYUNU says: "Let three full *Pukshu*, or lunar *half-months*,
 "be allowed to the surety, for the purpose of seeking an absconded
 "principal, and if he point out the principal, then let the surety be held
 "worthy of being absolved." The three *half months*, are to be understood
 only as an example, meaning, that so much time must be allowed as is requi-
 red for the search.

2. KATYAYUNU:³ "If a surety for the appearance of a debtor produce When lia-
ble them-
selves,
 "him not at the time, and in the place agreed on, he shall *discharge*
 "what he is bound for, unless he was prevented by the act of God or the
 "king." *Discharge what he is bound for*; shall pay the sum due to the
 creditor. BRUHUSPUTI⁴: "The two first [kind of sureties] on failure of
 "their engagement, must pay the sum lent, at the time stipulated: the
 "two last, or in default of them, their issue, when the debt is sued
 "for," and their
sons,
CLXXIV.
 KATYAYUNU⁵: "Money due by a surety need not on any
 "account be paid by his grandsons, but in every instance such a debt
 "incurred by his father must be made good by a son, without in-

1—Digest 1st, 239. Report 1st, 98. Strange 1st, 292-9.

2—Digest 1st, 233.

3—Digest 1st, 241.

4—Digest 1st, 238.

5—Digest 1st, 266.

but not
grandsons.

“terest.” VYASU: ¹ “The son of a son shall [in general] pay the debt of his grandfather, but the son [only] shall pay the debt of his father incurred by his becoming a surety, [and both of them] without interest; but it is clearly settled, that their sons, [the great grandson and grandson respectively] are not [morally] bound to pay.” The grandsons need only pay the principal amount of their grandfather’s debts—A son need only pay the principal of a debt incurred by his father as a surety, and devolving on him.

Exception.

3. This however, supposing the security to have been undertaken by him without receipt of property [or consideration] in return; for if he received [any] property as an inducement to become surety, in that case, the sum for which he was bound shall be paid with interest, by his sons or grandsons. And accordingly KATYAYONU ² declares: “Should a man become surety for the appearance of a debtor, from whom he had received a pledge [as his own security], the creditor, [if that surety die], may compel his son to pay the debt, even without assets left by his father.”

Law of
“jointly
and
severally.”

4. YANYUWULKYU: ³ “When there are two or more sureties jointly bound, they shall pay their proportionate shares of the debt; but when they are bound *severally* [*Ekucchaya*], the payment shall be made [by any of them], as the creditor pleases.” *Severally*, is when each of them makes this agreement, ‘I alone will pay the whole.’ This [agreement] being obtained as the creditor’s guarantee, any one of the sureties, from whom he may please to demand the debt, must pay it. If the compact of each be thus, ‘I will pay my share;’ then payment must be made accordingly. Thus must it be understood. KATYAYONU: “When two or more are *severally* bound, any one of them may be made to pay, wherever he is found. If absent in a foreign country, his son shall pay the whole; if

1—Digest 1st, 254.

2—Digest 1st, 319-49, the second reading is followed.

3—Digest 1st, 287. Colebrooke on Obligations, 158-61.

“ the father be dead, his son shall be forced to pay, according to his *father's* “ *share.*” *Father's share*, that is, in proportion to the father's share [of the whole debt guaranteed].

CLXXV.

5. YANYUWULKYU: ¹ “ When the surety is compelled to pay a notorious debt to the creditor, the debtor shall be forced to repay double the “ sum to the surety.” BRUHUSPUTI: ² “ Should a surety, being harassed, “ pay the debt for which he was bound, he shall receive twice the sum from “ the debtor, after the lapse of a month and half.”

Surety's remuneration by the principal.

— o o o —

SECTION IV.

1. Now these are the rules for recovery of debt by a creditor. BRUHUSPUTI: ³ “ From a debtor who *promises* payment, the debt may be “ recovered by mild remonstrance and the like; and by *other resources*; “ by the mode of moral duty; by legal deceit; by violent compulsion; and “ by confinement at home.” *Promises*, engaged for by the debtor.

Recovery of Debts.

2. *By other resources*, that is, by the means [*oopaya*], which are thus enumerated by THE SAME AUTHOR: ⁴ “ By the interposition of friends and “ kinsmen, by mild remonstrance, by importunate *following*, or by *staying* “ constantly *at the house* of the debtor, he may be compelled to pay the “ debt: this mode of recovery is called a mode consonant to moral duty, “ [*Dhurmu*].” ⁵ “ When a creditor, with an artful design, borrows any “ thing of his debtor, or withholds a thing *deposited* by him, or the like, and “ thus compels payment of the debt, this is called legal deceit [*oopudhi*].” ⁶ “ When, having tied the debtor, he carries him to his own house, and “ by beating or other means compels him to pay, this is called violent

Means of recovery enumerated.

1—2—Digest 1st, 258. Cole. on Obligations, 158-61.

3—Digest 1st, 349.

4—Digest 1st, 339.

5—Digest 1st, 341. Colebrooke on Obligations, 293.

Strange's Elem. 1st, 283.

6—Digest 1st, 343

“ compulsion [*būlatkaru*].”¹ “ When he forces the debtor to pay, by confining
 “ his son, his wife, or his cattle, or by watching constantly at his door,
 “ this is called lawful confinement [*Achuritum*].” *Following*, claiming his
 attention. *Staying at the house*, begging the money of him. *Deposited*,
 [*Unrahitum*] ornaments or other things, given as if for delivery to another.²

Rules for
 enforcing
 them
 CLXXVI.

3. The rules for putting such means in force, are thus declared by
 KATYAYUNU³: “ By mild expostulation let a creditor procure payment from
 “ a king, from his master, and from a priest; but from a friend, or an heir,
 “ by some artful contrivance.” “ BHUGOO ordained, that merchants, cul-
 “ tivators of land, and artists, must be made to pay their debts according
 “ to the custom of the country; but that a creditor might enforce pay-
 “ ment from dishonest debtors, by violent measures.” THE SAME AUTHOR
 X adds,⁴: “ A debtor, being arrested [and freely acknowledging the
 “ debt], may be openly dragged before the public assembly, and confined
 “ until he pay what is due, according to the immemorial usage of the
 “ country [*deshacharu*].” Preventing the prisoner from performing na-
 tural evacuations, is thus prohibited by THE SAME AUTHOR:⁵ “ When a
 “ prisoner has need of ejecting urine or fæces, he should either be fol-
 “ lowed [at a distance], or dismissed on *security*.” *Security*, by leaving
 his son or other relative, to be a prisoner in his stead.

Security to
 be taken.

4. Taking security for a prisoner's appearance, he may be set at liberty
 for meals; for THE SAME AUTHOR says:⁶ “ Should he have given a surety,
 “ he must be released each day, at the hour of meals; and at night, if a
 “ surety have been given to such effect: But if he do not tender a
 “ surety for appearance, *nor avail himself* of such a surety, he must be con-
 “ fined in *jail*, or delivered to the custody of keepers.” “ A venerable,

1—Digest 1st, 342. Strango 1st, 307.

2—Chapter 6th, para. 6.

3—Digest 1st, 344. q. v.

4—Digest 1st, 339.

5—Digest 1st, 346. where it reads, ‘ in fetters ’

6—Digest 1st, 346-7. Strango's Elem. 1st, 307.

“ *trust-worthy*, and virtuous man, shall not be confined in jail; unrestrained, he must be released, [or dismissed] under the obligation of an oath.” *Nor avail himself*, if he should not give [security], having the opportunity. *Jail*, a prison. *Keepers*; that is, he must be put in confinement, duly made over to the officers. *Trust-worthy*, creditable.

5. BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ “ *After the time for payment has past, and when the interest ceases [on becoming equal to the principal], the creditor may either recover his debt, or require a new writing in the form of wheel interest [Chukruvridhi].*” *After the time for payment has past, that is, when the debt having by interest become double, or more than that [where higher interest is legal], the interest on that event reaches its legal boundary. The creditor may recover his debt, may exact it. Charging interest on a debt, of which the interest has been [from time to time] added to the principal, is called Chukruvridhi, wheel or compound interest.* ²

Compound
Interest al-
lowed.

CLXXVII.

6. NARUDU: ³ “ Should a debtor be disabled, by [famine or other] calamity of the time, from paying the whole debt, he shall be only compelled to pay it [in small sums], from time to time, according to his ability, as he happens to gain property.” MUNOO: ⁴ “ Even by personal labour shall the debtor pay what is adjudged, if he be of the same class with the creditor, or of a lower; but a debtor of a higher class must pay it [according to his income], by little and little.” And though YANYUWULKYU ⁵ says: “ He may compel a poor debtor of a low class to do work, by way of paying his debt: but a *Brahmunu*, if indigent, must be made to pay gradually according to his income [or casual gains:]” yet the word, *Brahmunu*, here refers to any man of high cast. THE SAME AUTHOR ⁶ adds: “ He who recovers an acknowledged debt

Mode of
exacting
payment of
acknow-
ledged
debts.

¹—Digest 1st, 357. Strange 1st, 297.

²—Cole. on Oblig. p. 80. “ Compound Interest.”

³—Digest 1st, 353.

⁴—Chapter 8th, v. 177.

⁵—Digest 1st, 351. Strange's Elem. 1st, 308, See Chap. 16th, Sect. 1st, para. 3, note.

⁶—Digest 1st, 356.

“ by his own act, [in any of the legal modes to which the debtor has
 “ tacitly consented] shall not be blamed by the king; and if the debtor
 “ shall complain of such an act before the king, he shall be fined, and
 “ compelled to pay the debt.”

Debtor's
 appeal to
 Justice.

7. BRUHUSPUTI¹: “ This rule concerns an acknowledged debt; but he
 “ who contests the demand, shall be compelled to pay, on proof in court
 “ by written evidence or oral testimony.” “ When the debtor appeals to
 “ judicature, or when the demand is unliquidated [or doubtful, *sundigdhe*]
 “ he shall never be constrained by the mere act of the creditor; and he who
 “ *constrains* a debtor thus exempted from such constraint, shall be fined
 “ according to law.” *Constraint* [*Asedhu*]; ² imprisonment not against
 CLXXVIII the king's order. He adds: ³ “ A debtor is considered as appealing to
 “ judicature, when he says, ‘ I will pay whatever shall by law be declared
 “ ‘ to be due.’ ” KATYAYUNU: ⁴ “ Any creditor who harasses a debtor
 “ appealing to judicature, shall forfeit that claim, and pay an equal fine.”
 BRUHUSPUTI: “ Should any person take upon himself to act in a disputed
 “ matter, without having first made known his case to the prince, he shall
 “ be seized and sentenced to punishment; neither shall his claim be
 “ awarded.”

Costs of
 Suit.

8. YUMU: ⁵ “ If a rich debtor, through dishonest perverseness, pay not
 “ his debt, the king shall compel him to discharge it, and may take from him
 “ twice the sum [as a fine].” YANYUWULKYU: ⁶ “ A debtor shall be forced
 “ to pay to the king *ten in the hundred*, of the sum proved against him;
 “ and the creditor, having received the sum due, must pay five in the hun-
 “ dred [towards defraying the charges of judicature].” *Ten in the hundred*,

1—Digest 1st, 363-4.

2—See Chap. 1st, Sec. 1st, para. 16.

3—Digest 1st, 364.

4—Digest 1st, 365.

5—Digest 1st, 366. Strange's Elem. 1st, 307.

6—Digest 1st, 372. Strange's Elem. 307-8. This was the practice under the Maharatta Government, which levied a tax upon both parties, that from the winner being termed *Hurkee*, that of the loser *Goonahgaree*.

that is, ten besides [or over] every hundred [awarded to his creditor]. A tenth share [from the debtor cast], and a twentieth, [from the creditor] is here meant: The result is, that these two shares belong to the king, and the balance goes to the creditor. Taking a tenth share, relates to a poor debtor; for in respect to a rich one, NARUDU¹ records this distinction: "But if a rich debtor, though dishonest perverseness, pay not his debt, and the king be forced to cause payment, he may then take *twenty* as his share." meaning, *twenty* on the hundred.

9. When more creditors than one are collected together against one debtor, the order of payment is [to be as] thus laid down by YANYUWULKYU:² "A debtor shall be forced to pay his creditors in the order in which the debts were contracted, after first discharging those of a *Brahmun*, or of the king." And in the VIVADU RUTNAKURU we find these words of KATYAYUNU³: "If there be many debts at once, that which was first contracted shall first be paid, after those of a king, or of a *Brahmun* learned in the VEDU."⁴ "If all the contracts were written in one day, the debts, payment, subsisting demand, and interest, shall be equal; otherwise, in order of time."⁵ "That capital on which it is proved that the assets were gained, and no other debt, must be paid by the debtor [out of those assets]."

Priority
among
many
claims.

CLXXIX.

10. YANYUWULKYU:⁶ "If the debtor pay by little and little, let him write the sums paid on the back of his written contract, or let the creditor give a receipt signed by his own hand." NARUDU:⁷ "Let the creditor give a writing after the debt has been acquitted; or if that cannot be, let him make a [public] *acknowledgement*: this shall be a mutual acquittance of the creditor and debtor." *Acknowledgement*, some deed

Receipts
and acquit-
tances.

1—Digest 1st, 371. and 375.

2—Digest 1st, 736. and note. In the 7th line, "oottumvurnanam" is printed for oottumurnanam, contrary to all the manuscripts.

3—4—Digest 1st, 377-a.

5—Digest 1st, 380.

6—Digest 1st, 385.

7—Digest 1st, 384.

of settlement, for the purpose of making known repayment of the debt.

Moral of
fact of
fraud.

11. The bad consequences that will ensue to a debtor, neglecting to pay his debts, are now described. KATYAYUNU says: "He who shall not pay to his creditor what he has received from him in *loan* [*Ooddharu*] or other way, shall most certainly be born again, either his *slave, servant, wife, or beast of burthen.*" *Loan*, debt [of all kinds, *runu*]. To *other*, must be supplied, loan for use, and deposit. *Slave*, one by birth. *Servant*, a slave bought with a price. NARUDU: "If a man do not repay what he has borrowed for use, and a debt, as well as what he has *promised*, that sum may be increased, even to ten million times its original amount. And after that, if it be allowed to increase still more, until by its own accumulation it have amounted to an hundred [times] ten million, it must then stop; the debtor shall become, in each successive birth, a horse, an ass, a bullock, and a slave." *Promised*, what he has agreed to give. VYASU also says: "When a person, being either an ascetic, or keeper of a perpetual fire, dies indebted to any one, the future rewards, of the austerities of the one, and the sacred duties of the other, shall all be transferred to the account of the creditor."

CLXXX.

Sons and
grandsons
whenever liable.

12. BRUHUSPURI¹ declares: "The sons must pay the debt of their father, when proved, as if it were their own [that is, with interest]; the son's son must pay the debt of his grandfather [but] without interest; and his son [that is, the great grandson], shall not be compelled to discharge it, [unless he be heir, and have assets]." So YANYUWULKYU:² "The father being gone to a foreign country, or deceased [naturally or civilly], or wholly immersed in vices [or difficulty], the sons, or their sons, must pay the debt; but if disputed, it must be proved by witnesses."

Only when
twenty
years old.

13. Debts must be paid by the sons, or other relatives, when they have

¹—Digest 1st, 265-6, and note. Reports 2d, 9.

²—Digest 1st, 268. Reports 2d, 290. Colebrooke on obligations, p. 25. and Strange's Elements, 2nd, 444.

reached their twentieth year, for NARUDU says: ¹ “ The father, or [if the family be undivided], the uncle, or the elder brother, having travelled to a foreign country, the son shall not be forced to discharge the debt until twenty years have elapsed.” KATYAYANU: ² “ If the father be at home, but afflicted with a chronick disorder, [though not without hope of recovery], or *absent*, his debt shall be paid by his sons, after a lapse of twenty years.” The word *absent* includes the sense of ‘dead,’ as well; even as VISHNOO says: ³ “ If he who contracted the debt should die, or become a religious anchoret, or remain abroad for twenty years, that debt shall be discharged by his sons or grandsons, but not by remoter descendants, against their will.”

14. NARUDU: ⁴ “ A father being dead, his sons, whether after partition or before it, shall discharge his debt in proportion to their shares; or that son alone who has taken the burden upon himself.” KATYAYANU: “ If any debts exist against the father, his son shall not take possession of his effects. They must be given to his creditors, and if he die *without wealth*, still his son must pay his debts.” *Wealth*, must be connected Sons of debtors how to act. CLXXXI. to *without*; the meaning is ‘[if he die] *without wealth*’. BRUHUSPUTI: ⁵ “ The father’s debt must be first paid, and next a debt contracted by the man himself; but the debt of the paternal grandfather must even be paid before either of those.”

15. YANYUWULKYU: ⁶ “ A son need not pay, in this world, money due by his father for spirituous liquors, for lustful pleasures, for losses at play; nor what remains unpaid of a fine, or toll [*Shoolku*]; nor any thing idly promised.” BRUHUSPUTI: ⁷ “ The sons are not compellable to pay sums due by their father for spirituous liquors, for losses at play, for Debts not recoverable from sons.

1—2—Digest 1st, 277. Reports 2d, 57.

3—Digest 1st, 266.

4—Digest 1st, 267. Colebrooke on Obligations, pages 25 and 162, particularly.

5—Digest 1st, 265.

6—Digest 1st, 311. Reports 2d, page 200.

7—Digest 1st, 305.

“ promises made without any consideration, or under the influence of lust,
 “ or of wrath; or sums for which he was a surety; ¹ or a fine, or a toll
 “ [*Shoolku*], or the balance of either.” OOSHUNA declares: ² “ A fine, or the
 “ balance of a fine, as also a bribe [or toll, *Shoolku*] or the balance of it, are
 “ not to be paid by the son, neither shall he discharge debts improper, [not
 “ sanctioned by law or custom].”

Order of
 those liable
 for a man's
 debts.

16. The order of those bound to pay the debts (of one deceased) is thus told by YANVUWULKYU: ³ “ He who has *received the estate*, must
 “ pay the debts of it; and in like manner, he who *takes the wife* [of the
 “ deceased]; or the son, whose [father's] *assets* are *not held by another*
 “ [*ununyashritu*]: but of one having no son, the other heirs [*Rikthinuh*,
 “ must pay the debts: or, may levy them. para. 18.]” He is said to *receive the estate* legally, who does so, even when there is a son of the deceased in existence, but disqualified by some disheriting defect, as if he be an eunuch, or the like; but illegally, when he usurps the estate of a father, whose son is free from any disqualification. The same [responsibility attaches] to him who *takes the wife* of another. The term, *assets not held by another*, may be understood in both ways, [of one who has taken his father's assets, as well as one whose father had no assets], by reason of the absence of an opponent endowed with the quality of alienation, as well as from the absence of an opponent only pointing out the quality of property.

Responsibility defined
 CLXXXII.
 in each case.

17. And first of all, he who has received the estate; on failure of him, the person who takes the wife; and on failure of him, the son, possessed of unalienated wealth [*Ununyashritu*]. If there be none, it must be paid by the grandsons, but the principal only. If they be not in existence, then the great grandson, the wife, daughter, or other heirs [*rikthinuh*], if they have received the estate, must pay the debt—such is the meaning. It is not to be paid by the great grandson, the wife, or the others, if they have not taken the estate. But

1—See Sec. 3d, paras. 2-3.

2—Reports 2d, 303, note.

3—Digest 1st 370-71-75, and the readings there.

receipt of ever so small a portion of the estate, imposes the liability of liquidating the debts, to whatever amount. For there is no such law, as [that payment shall follow only on receipt of property] equal or more than equal [to the debt to be paid.]

18. The wife, daughters, and other heirs to a creditor dying without male issue, being entitled to receive his estate, may levy his debts from his debtor. This is another meaning of the latter part [of the text, para. 16].

Heirs of a creditor can recover.

19. VISHNOO: ¹ "He who takes the estate of one whether leaving a son or no male issue, must pay his debts." This is the meaning. BRUHAPUTI: ² "Even so, the person who takes the widow shall be liable for the debt, on failure of successors to the estate." KATYAYUNU: ³ "The judge shall compel a son to pay the debt of his father, provided he be involved in no distress, be capable of property, and liable to bear the burden; but in no other case shall he compel the son to pay his father's debts." "First let him who takes the estate pay; after him, the son; if there be no son, or he be utterly destitute of means, then he who takes the wife." NARUDU: ⁴ "But if a woman take the protection of another man, carrying her riches and her offspring, he must pay the debt of her husband, or abandon such a woman." KATYAYUNU: ⁵ "A debt which has been contracted by indigent and childless vintners, and the rest, must be paid by him, who has the care of their wives." NARUDU says: ⁶

Continuation of the subject.

CLXXXIII.

¹—It would seem that some text of Vishnoo had been omitted here, and that the succeeding passage was the commentary, but all the copies read it in this way.

²—Digest 1st, 274.

³—Digest 1st, 273.

⁴—Digest 1st, 330.

⁵—Digest 1st, 325.

⁶—Digest 1st, 272. Reports 1st, p. 153, note 3.

' then he who takes the widow must pay the debts of the deceased;' by reason of the former quoted text of YANYUWULYKU, [para. 16].

Debts binding on the head of the family, when contracted for its use by others.

20. KATYAYUNU says ¹: " Debts incurred for domestic uses, by the
 " slave, wife, mother, or disciple, of one gone to a far country, or deceased,
 " ed, and also by his son, must be paid, so says BHRIGOO." And YANYU-
 WULYU holds ²: " A woman shall not pay debts incurred by her
 " husband, or son; neither a father those of his son, nor a husband those
 " of his wife, unless contracted on account of the family." KATYAYUNU:
 " That must be paid which may have been verbally promised, as well as
 " what has been engaged for to another." NARUDU: ³ " A father must
 " pay the debt of his son, contracted in a time of distress." YANYUWUL-
 KYU ⁴: " If the wife of a herdsman, a vintner, a dancer, a washerman,
 " or a hunter, contract a debt, the husband shall pay it, because his
 " livelihood chiefly depends on the labour of such a wife." THE SAME
 AUTHOR says ⁵: " A debt *acknowledged* [by her husband], or contracted
 " by her jointly with her husband or son, or contracted by the woman
 " herself, must be paid by a wife [or mother;] no other debts shall a
 " woman be compelled to pay." And even if not *acknowledged*, she shall
 still pay it, if she have received his estate: for, thus says KATYAYUNU: ⁶
 " If a wife be thus addressed by her lord at the point of death, [or just
 " before a long journey], ' Such a debt must be paid by thee,' she must
 CLXXXIV. " pay it, however unwilling, if assets were left in her hands." NARUDU ⁷:
 " But if a woman who has male issue, [but no several property], desert
 " her son, and recur to another man, her son alone must pay the whole
 " debt." This however refers particularly to a son who has got possession
 of his father's wealth. NARUDU ⁸: " A debt contracted before par-

1—Digest 1st, 17. Cole. on Oblig. 24-26-31-232. Strange's Elem. 1st, 275.

2—Digest 1st, 313. Reports 2d, 203. Cole. p. 28-9.

3—Digest 1st, 308.

4—Digest 1st, 217. Cole. on Oblig. 29. Strange 1st, 276.

5—Digest 1st, 314.

6—Digest 1st, 316. where it is attributed to NARUDU.

7—Digest 1st, 329.

8—Digest 1st, 364.

"tition by an uncle, or a brother, or a mother, for the support of the family, all the parceners or joint-tenants shall discharge."

21. Should neither [the creditor, nor] his sons nor other relatives, be in existence, the modes of obtaining payment are as declared by NARUDU:¹

Heirs of creditors how to recover.

"If a creditor of the priestly class be not present but have issue, [the king shall] cause the debt to be paid [to them]; if he have no issue, to his near kinsman [*Sukoolyu*]; if he leave none who are near, to those who are distant [paternal and maternal, *Bundhoo*]: If he leave no heirs, near or distant, [nor persons connected by sacred studies], the king shall bestow it on worthy priests; but if none such are present, let him cast it into the waters: [the debts of other classes, in similar circumstances, he may seize for himself]." PRUJAPUTI also says: "If there be no distant kinsmen, let it be paid to some twice born man, or be cast into the water: When cast into the water or into the fire, that money is carried to the account of [the deceased, or of] his ancestors in a future state." If however an owner should appear to claim money [which is to be so] thrown into the fire, or the like, he shall obtain it.

Appropriation of the debt, in default of them.

Reservation.

CHAPTER VI.

OF DEPOSITS,—[*NIKSHEPU*.]

1 NARUDU:² "Where a man bails any of his effects to another, in whom he has confidence, and from whom he has no doubt of receiving his property again, it is a deposit, which the wise call *Nikshepu*."³ When a thing is deposited, under seal, without mentioning its quanti-

Deposits.

CLXXXV.

Of two kinds, undefined, and specified.

¹—Digest 1st, 335.

²—Digest 1st, 401. Strange's Elem. 1st, 280.

³—Digest 1st, 403. For "deposits under seal" see Essay on Bailments p. 38. Strange 1st, 282. For a "deposit" see Essay on Bailments, p. 37, note 4.

ty; if its kind and form be unknown, it is considered as an *Oopunidhi*:
 "but the wise call a specified deposit *Nikshepu*."

Preservati-
 on and re-
 storation of
 them.

2. BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ "The merit of one who preserves a *deposit*, or pro-
 tects a dependant, is the same with the merit of him who gives golden
 vessels or clothes." ²: "The very thing bailed must be restored to the
 very man who bailed it, in the very manner in which it was bailed:
 it must *not* be delivered to *his heir*, apparent or presumptive." *Deposit*,
 a thing bailed. *Not to his heir*, but to the bailer, in his own person.
 MUNOO ³: "He who restores not a thing really deposited, and he who
 demands what he never bailed, shall both be punished as thieves; or
 shall pay a fine equal to the value of the thing claimed."

Rules in
 case of
 damage, or
 loss,

3. BRUHUSPUTI ⁴: "Should the bailee suffer the thing bailed to be
 destroyed by his negligence, while he keeps his own goods with very
different care, or should he refuse to restore it on *demand*, he shall be
 compelled to pay [the value of] it with interest." *Different care*, preserv-
 ing his own property. But if his own property should at the same time
 suffer injury, through that act of negligence, he is not to blame. YAN-
 YUWULKYU: ⁵ "If the depositary, of his own accord [without the consent
 of the owner], *use* the thing deposited, he shall be amerced, and com-
 pelled to pay the price of the thing with *profit*." *Use*, make a livelihood
 by employing it in his worldly transactions for the sake of gain.

Or use of
 them.

Interest on
 them.
 CLXXXVI.

CLXXXVI.

And punish-
 ment for
 fraud.

4. *Profit*, interest; of which a distinction is mentioned by KATYA-
 YUNU: ⁶ "A deposit, the balance of interest, a commodity sold, and the
 price of a commodity purchased, not being paid after demand, shall bear
 interest at the rate of five in the hundred." MUNOO: ⁷ "[For the first

¹—Digest 1st, 416. Strange's Elem. 1st, 281.

²—Chap. 6th, v. 191. Digest 1st, 432. q. v.

³—Digest 1st, 428. Strange's Elem. 1st, 283.

⁷—Chap. 6th, v. 192. Digest 1st, 432.

²—Digest 1st, 416-16. Strange's Elem. 1st, 280.

⁴—Digest 1st, 420. Strange's Elem. 1st, 278-282. Essay
 on Bailments p. 6-46.

⁶—Digest 1st, 427.

" offence], the King should compel a fraudulent depositary, without any
 " distinction between a deposit under seal or open, to pay a fine equal to
 " its value."

5. BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ " If it be destroyed by the act of God or of the
 " king, together with the goods of the bailee, there is no fault in him."

Exemption
for the act
of God or
the king.

YANYUWULKYU: ² " But he shall not be compelled to replace that [deposit]
 " lost by the act of God or the king, or seized by robbers." MUNOO: ³
 " But if a depositary, by his own free act, shall deliver a deposit to the
 " heir of a deceased bailer, *he must not be harassed*, either by the King or
 " by the kinsmen [of the deceased]" *Heir*, a near relation. The sense
 is this, '*he must not be harassed*, without proof, for the sake of more
 ' property [than was delivered].'

Redelivery
to the heirs
of the bailer.

6. The whole of the above laws relating to deposits, are also otherwise
 collectively applied to other bailments. BRUHUSPUTI: ⁴ " In the case of
 " a deposit for delivery [*Unvahitum*], a loan for use [*Yachitum*], a bailment
 " with an artist [*Silpi nyasu*], and a pledge, [*Bundhuku*] the same law is
 " enacted, and likewise in the case of a person received under protec-
 " tion [or a dependant]." A deposit for delivery, is, when a chattel is given
 into the hands of another, saying, 'Such an one deposited it with me, and
 ' I pray you give it to him.' Loan for use, ornaments or the like,
 borrowed for the sake of show at a marriage, or other ceremony. A bail-
 ment with an artist; what has been openly deposited with goldsmiths, or
 such persons, to be made into earrings or the like. NARUDU: ⁵ " This
 " very law is enacted in the case of loans for use [*Yachitum*], deposits for
 " delivery [*Unvahitum*], and the like; bailments with an artist, [*Silpi nyasu*]" ⁶

The above
rules appli-
ed to all
species of
bailments.

CLXXXVII

¹—2—Digest 1st, 421-2. Essay on Bailments 104. b. nota. Strange 1st, 278-81-204.

²—Chap. 8th, v. 186. Digest: 1st, 420.

⁴—Digest 1st, 410.

⁵—Digest 1st, 408. Strange's Elem. 1st, 279, Essay on Bailments 36.

⁶—Essay on Bailments p. 22, note 7, and p. 90-91 "Hiring of work." Strange 1st, 208.

"sealed deposits" [*Oopunidhi*], bailments in the form called *Nyasu*, and "rebailments" [*Prutinyusu*]. *Rebailment*, that is, when the depository rebails to another the very thing which had been bailed or deposited with him by the original owner. ²

Compensation in certain cases of loss by the act of God.

7. Compensation must in some cases be made by the artist, even when the goods bailed have been destroyed by the act of God or the king; for KATYAYONU says: ³ "If the artist keep the thing bailed, after the time agreed on for working it [into ornaments and the like], he shall be forced to pay its value, even though it be destroyed by the act of God."

Rate of valuation for clothes.

8. NARUDU: "An eighth share of the value is lost, of clothes once washed; when twice washed, a quarter; thrice, a third; and when four times washed, a half; but after more than half the value is gone, it shall be valued in order, according to the damage of each quarter share."

Punishment for unauthorized use of them

YANYUWULKYU: "The washerman who wears on his own person, the clothes of his employer, shall be fined three *punus*. But if they be sold, or let out to hire, or pledged, or lent out by him, [he shall be fined] ten *punus*." Let out to hire, what has been given to another for receipt of hire. Pledged, put out in pawn.

Rate of valuation for metals.

9. The rules respecting loss incurred in melting *all* metals, except gold, are thus expounded by the SAME AUTHOR: ⁴ "Gold undergoing the action of fire is nothing diminished thereby; the loss on silver in a similar operation is two *punus* per centum; in tin and lead, eight; in copper, five; and ten in iron." Whenever the loss [in the weight] of [returned metal, whether] silver or other, is greater [than these rates], a fine must be imposed on the goldsmith, or other [workman].

1—Strange's Elem. Ist, 282 Essay on Bailments p. 38. See Digest Ist, 402. YANYUWULKYU.

2—Strange's Elem. Ist, 289-90.

3—Digest Ist, 446. Strange Ist, 298.

4—The following rules are not unknown to the English Law, which has several Statutes to prevent fraud in similar cases. See Tomlins, tit. "Manufacturers." "Gold and silver," "Wire-drawers."

10. A distinction as to the increase in weight of thread, furnished to the workman for the purpose of making up certain clothes and the like, is laid down by the SAME AUTHOR: "Ten *pulus*¹ per centum shall be the increase in [weight of] cloths made of woollen or cotton thread. "In cloths of middling quality, five *pulus* per centum must be the increase, but in those of fine quality, three *pulus* are declared to be the standard." In some kinds, decrease is allowable, by the SAME AUTHORITY, who says: "In *embroidered* cloths, as well as those made of hair, a thirtieth share is declared [to be admissible] as loss [in weight], but there is to be neither loss nor gain, in the weight of those made of silk, or of the bark of a tree." *Embroidered*, by describing the *Svustiku*, or other patterns on ready prepared cloths, or other material, with colored thread or the like.

Farther remarks on valuation of manufactures.

CLXXXVIII.

11. In work, when a certain term is specified, and the workman fail to send home the article when demanded within the term, then, even if damage happen to the goods, the workman is not to blame; ² for the SAME AUTHOR says: "If, having fully considered the nature of the work, a certain time be fixed for its delivery; in that case, should the owner demand it when only half finished, and not obtain it, still it shall not be awarded to him." The exceptions are declared by the SAME AUTHOR: "If, when the term has elapsed, and the work is finished, the workman should not deliver it when demanded of him, and it be afterwards damaged, or stolen; the person who would have received the article, shall obtain the value of it." AND AGAIN: "He who, having received a thing borrowed for his use, shall not restore it when demanded back, shall be seized, and by force compelled to give it up; and let a fine be imposed, if he do not then restore it."

Rules regarding contracts for work.

Exceptions.

Punishment of a fraudulent borrower.

1—As. Res. 5th, 91. Wilson. ad verb.

2—Essay on bailments, 90-91. "Hiring of work."

CHAPTER VII.

SALE WITHOUT OWNERSHIP,—[USWAMI VIKRUYU.]

Sale with-
out owner-
ship.
CLXXXIX.

1. VYASU¹: “ When the goods of another are sold in the owner’s ab-
sence, [whether they had been] borrowed for use, bailed for delivery,
deposited under seal, or stolen, it is a sale without ownership.” KAT-

Unauthoris-
ed sale, gift,
or pledge,
void at law.

YAYUNU:² “ Let the judge declare void a sale, a gift, or a pledge, made
without ownership.” *Without ownership*, is here a past participle, and
used separately, to denote the nature of each [act, of sale, gift, or pledge.]

Circumstan-
ces invali-
dating a
purchase.

2. NARUDU³: “ An open purchaser is clear of imputation, but a pur-
chase in secret is a theft.”⁴: “ He who buys any thing, from a slave
without authority from his master, from a man not of a good character, in
private, at a very low price, and at an unfit hour, becomes *the accomplice*
of him.” *The accomplice of him*, that is, of the thief.

Proof, by
the owners
of lost pro-
perty.

3. YANYUWULKYU:⁵ “ The right to a thing lost [and then found], must
be proved, by the mode of acquisition, or by [evidence of] possession:
otherwise, on failure of proof, a fine equal to a *fifth part* shall be paid
to the king.” *Fifth part*, a fifth share of the lost property. When the
evidence given by the witnesses adduced by the loser, is contrary to his
claim, he must be fined in double the amount of the lost property, for
VYASU says,⁶: “ If the plaintiff prove not his loss by witnesses, he shall
in that case be compelled to pay double its value; and the purchaser
is entitled to the thing.”

Production
of the seller
indemnifies
the purcha-
ser.

4. HE ALSO lays down the course to be pursued by the buyer⁷: “ But
if the seller be produced, the purchaser shall by no means be condemn-
ed; for then the law suit must be continued between the owner of the

1—Digest 1st, 453. Strange’s Elem. 1st, 259-302-3.

2—Digest 1st, 171.

3—Digest 1st, 512.

4—Digest 1st, 491.

5—Digest 1st, 498.

6—Digest 1st, 499.

7—Digest 1st, 502.

“ thing lost and the seller.” BRUHUSPUTI ¹: “ When the seller has been
 “ made appear, and has been condemned in the law-suit, let the judge
 “ cause him to pay the price to the buyer, and a fine to the king; and res-
 “ tore the property to its owner.” KATYAYUNU ²: “ Let time be given
 “ to the buyer for the production of the seller, according to the length
 “ of the road.” ³: “ If he cannot produce the seller, let him even justify
 “ the purchase; and if the purchase be justified, he shall in no wise be
 “ blamed by the king.” “ The claimant should first prove his property
 “ by evidence of kinsmen; next, to clear himself, the buyer should prove
 “ a fair purchase by [similar] witnesses, his own kinsmen.”

CXC.
 Time for
 the purpose
 to be allow-
 ed, and pro-
 ceedings in
 default.

5. “ Even if the purchaser clearly prove the sale, still the property must
 “ revert to the former owner who lost it.” Moreover, MUNOO: ⁴ “ But
 “ if the vender be *not producible*, and the vendee prove the publick sale,
 “ the latter must be dismissed by the king without punishment; and the
 “ former owner, who lost the chattel, may take it back, on paying the
 “ vendee half its value.” *Not producible*, not to be pointed out. It al-
 ludes to the property being assayed [as it were by the buyer], by [the
 test of] a public sale.

The first
 owner re-
 covers in
 all cases,
 under cer-
 tain rules.

6. KATYAYUNU ⁵: “ The defendant, not clearly proving an open sale
 “ to him, or not pointing out the seller, shall be made to deliver the thing
 “ claimed, and to pay a fine.” BRUHUSPUTI ⁶: “ If a purchase be made
 “ before a public assembly [of traders], with the knowledge of the king’s
 “ officers, but from a seller whose *dwelling place* is unknown; or if a claim
 “ be made after the death of the seller, [though known], the owner of the
 “ thing may recover his own property, on paying half the price given; half
 “ the value is lost to each of them: such must be the decision.” MURECHI:

Rules in re-
 spect to
 publicity of
 sales, and
 sellers’ pla-
 ces of resi-
 dence.

1—Digest 1st, 479.

2—Digest 1st, 484.

3—Digest 1st, 501.

4—Chap. 8th, v. 202. Digest 1st, 502.

5—Digest 1st, 491.

6—Digest 1st, 508.

" 1 : But if he cannot produce the seller, his *dwelling place* being unknown,
 " the loss shall be borne equally by the buyer, and by the [former] owner who
 " had lost the thing." *Dwelling place*, the spot where the seller resides.

Women,
cattle, and
land.
CXCL.

7. NARUDU : " For the possession of women, or cattle, as well as land,
 " leave must be distinctly *granted*. He who enjoys them without leave,
 " shall be forced to pay *the hire of such enjoyment*." *Granted*, ordered.
 The *hire of enjoyment*, rent, similar to the hire.

Term for
restoration
of escheated
property,

8. YANYUWULKYU : ² " The owner of a thing lost, or stolen, which had
 " been seized by the officers of police or revenue, whether by sea or land,
 " shall take it, [if claimed] within one year; after that time, the prince
 " [shall retain it]." As for this text of Munoo ³ : " Three years let the
 " king detain the property, of which no owner appears, [after a distinct
 " proclamation]: the owner, appearing within the three years, may take it ;
 " but, after that term, the king may confiscate it," it is only with reference
 to property belonging to a *Shrotriya*, [one conversant in the *Vedas*]. The

with the
share to be
reserved by
the king.

SAME AUTHOR says ⁴ : " The king may take a sixth part of the property so
 " detained by him, or a tenth, or a twelfth, remembering the duty of good
 " kings." Then, in the first year, he must give up the whole of the property.
 In the second year, let him give it up, after deducting a twelfth share; in
 the third year, a tenth; in the fourth, a sixth. After that term, the king
 may confiscate it; this only in case of its owner not appearing after
 three years : and then it may be appropriated by him only for his expenses ;
 but if the owner then make his appearance, it must be made good to him,
 even if expended : Thus says the MITAKSHURA. This however, only if
 the owner be unknown ; for if it be known, ' that such an one went away,
 ' forgetfully leaving the said property behind,' then he shall get it back, even
 after three years. Even the prince possesses no right of disposing of it,
 though he may at the sametime take some portion, however small, as his share.

Exception
in the own-
er's favor.

1—Digest 1st, §10.

2—Macnaghten p. 435-6.

3—Chap. 6th, 30.

4—Chap. 8th, 38.

9. YANYUWULKYU propounds the remuneration for trouble of the finder, keeping during one day, the stray animals of another: "The owner of stray animals must pay four *punus*, if the animal be of the species with solid hoofs; five *punus* for a human creature; two for every buffalo, camel, cow, or animal with cloven hoofs; but only a fourth, for every goat, or sheep." But their food must be paid for besides.

Remuneration of the CXCLII. finder of strays.

10. On the subject of treasure trove, [*Nidhi*] YANYUWULKYU says: "Let the king obtaining unclaimed property [*Nidhi*] give half to *Brahmunus*: but a learned *Brahmunu* may keep the whole, for he is lord of all." "And the king shall receive a sixth part of unclaimed property occupied by any other person." "In case of its being discovered without information from the finder, he must be made to pay a fine as well [as the sovereign's share]." If however, any one prove by mark, measure, or the like, that the property found belongs to himself, in that case let the prince deliver it to him, after giving a twelfth share to the informer, and taking his own sixth. This is stated by *Musoo*: "When a man claims treasure trove, declaring truly, 'This is my own property,' the prince shall still retain his own sixth share, and also a *twelfth*." This *twelfth*, being that assigned for the informer.

Law in regard to treasure trove.

11. On the subject of property carried off by thieves, the SAME AUTHOR says: "Let property carried off by thieves be restored by the prince to the owner, of whatever class he may be; if the prince take possession of it, he partakes of the crime with the thieves." In case he be unable to recover it from the thieves, KRISHNU DVAIPAYANU [*Vyasu*] says: "Should the prince be unable to recover stolen property from thieves, he shall make it good from his own treasury, provided he be powerless." Thus has been expounded the law of sale without ownership.

Restoration of stolen property to the owner.

CXCIII.

1--Macnaghten 437. Digest 1st, 461.

2--Chap. 8th, v. 35.

3--Chap. 8th, v. 40. Macnaghten 437.

4--Macnaghten 437.

CHAPTER VIII.

CONCERNS AMONG PARTNERS,—[SUNBHOORYU SUMOOT, THANUM.]

- Concerns among partners. 1. NARUDU :¹ " When traders, or others, jointly carry on business, it is called a 'concern among partners;' a title of judicial procedure."
- Mutual obligations. 2. BRUHUSPUTI :² " Whatever property a man lends, with the assent of many, or whatever business he so causes to be performed, is considered as the act of all the partners."³ : " They are declared to be competent arbitrators, and witnesses for each other, in doubtful cases of deceit, provided they bear no enmity to either party." " Should one of the partners be justly suspected of fraud, in buying, selling, [and the like], he may be cleared by ordeal : such is the rule in all controversies."
- CKCIV. 3. YANYUWULKYU :⁴ " A man of crooked ways let the other partners expel without profit ; and let a partner unable to act, appoint another man to act for him."⁵ : " If one partner does what the others forbid, or disapprove, or if he be negligent, [in doing what they allow], and the [common] property be injured, he shall make it good ; but he who preserves it from [robbers or other] misfortune, shall receive a tenth part of it [as his reward] "
- Provision for reward and punishment, of partners. 4. KATYAYUNU⁶ : " If four kinds of artisans be jointly employed ; *young apprentices, more experienced scholars, good artists, and teachers,* they shall receive, in order, one share, two, three, and four shares, of the pay, or profit." *Young apprentices*, persons learning their trade. *More experienced scholars*, those who are well versed in it. *Good artists*, thoroughly skilled [in every branch]. *Teachers*, persons making new inven-
- Order of shares in a partnership.

1—Digest 2d, p. 1.

2—Digest 2d, 66-7

3—Digest 2d, 8-9

4—Digest 2d, 17-24

5—Digest 2d, 12

6—Digest 2d, 78.

tions. BRUHUSPUTI: ¹ " Where several men jointly build a house or a temple, or dig a pool, or make sacred utensils, let the chief workman receive a double share of the pay." The SAME AUTHOR adds ²: " This has been ordained by wise legislators for a band of musicians: let him who marks the time skilfully, take a share and a half; and let the singers have equal shares "

5. KATYAYONU: " If men, [who have joined together in any business], but are dispersed abroad, meet with imprisonment, then, whatever is paid for the sake of their liberation, shall be borne by them according to the share of each." ³ " The law [before] propounded relates to all partners, whether merchants, husbandmen, robbers, [commissioned in war time], or artizans, when they have made no special agreement for their shares." Losses to be borne in common.

— ♦ — ♦ — ♦ —

CHAPTER IX.

SUBTRACTION OF GIFT,—[DUTTAPRUDANIKUM].

1. NARUDU: ⁴ " When a man desires to recover a thing which was *not duly given*, it is called subtraction of what has been given; [and this is] a title of administrative justice." *Not duly given*, is a past participle, to denote the quality of the transaction, and signifies ' prohibited.' THE SAME AUTHOR adds: ⁵ " In civil affairs, the law of gift is four-fold; what may, or may not, be given; and what is, or is not, a valid gift." Subtraction of gift. CXCV.

2. NARUDU: ⁶ " What is bailed for delivery, what is lent for use, a pledge, joint property, a deposit, a son, a wife, and the whole estate of Unalienable property.

¹—Digest 2d, 80. where it is ' utensils of leather,' *Charmiku*, for *Dharmiku*; some of the Manuscripts had the other word.

²—Digest 2d, 83.

³—Digest 2d, 92.

⁴—5—Digest 2d, 94—5

⁶—Digest 2d, 97-8. Reports 1st, 293-4, 2nd, 428. See Chapter 6th, para. 6th.

“ a man who has issue living, the Sages have declared unalienable, even
 “ by a man oppressed with grievous calamities, and [of course], what has
 “ been promised to another.” Now, as a man has no property in his wife
 or son, it is only a repetition of the prohibition against their alienation, in
 conformity to the VEDUS, ‘ Neither between, nor in the heavens above.’
 From this, and from the law of YANYUWULKYU: ¹ “ In distress for [the
 “ maintenance of] the family, [or, the family not opposing the gift, on ac-
 “ count of poverty], property may be given away, except a wife and son.”
 the purport of the above is confirmed by the reservation of a wife and
 son. The non-existence of property in a wife or son has been already
 examined in the discussions on property.

Gift of un-
 alienable
 property
 are void.

3. In case of their being alienated, not only will the act be untenable
 in law, but moreover penance also must be performed; for, in treating of
 this very subject, DUKSHU says: ² “ The man who gives them away is a
 “ fool, and must expiate the sin by penance.” So MUNOO: ³ “ He who
 “ receives what may not be given, and he who gives away the same, shall
 “ both be punished like thieves, and be both caused to pay the fine of
 “ *Oottum sahusu*.” ⁴

Alienable
 property.
 CXCVI.

4. What things may be given, is declared by PRUHUSPUTI: ⁵ “ A
 “ man may give what remains, after the food and clothing of his family.”
 What must without fail be given, is told by KATYAYUNU: ⁶ “ He who de-
 “ livers not a present which he has promised to a *Brahmun*, shall be com-
 “ pelled to pay it as a debt, and incurs the first amercement.”

Gift and
 sale in what
 cases pro-
 hibited.

5. GOUTUMU: ⁷ “ A man shall not give, even what he has promised,
 “ to a person whom the law declares incapable of receiving.” Gift or sale
 of a livelihood [*Vritti*] are thus forbidden by VYASU: ⁸ “ They who are

1.—Digest 2d, 128. Reports 1st, 69. 2d, 428. See Chap. 4th, Section 1st, para. 12.

2.—Digest 2d, 110.

3.—Not found in his institutes.

4.—See Chap. 18th, para 2d,

5.—Digest 2d, 131

6.—Digest 2d 170.

7.—Digest 2d, 172.

8.—Digest 2d, 118. Jim. Va 21. Mit. 257. Reports 2d, 428.

" are born, or yet unbegotten, and they are who still in the womb, require
 " the means of support: no gift or sale should therefore be made."

6. NARUDU ¹ thus propounds the distinctions, of gifts valid and void: Gifts valid.
 " Valid gifts are declared to be of seven sorts; void gifts assume sixteen
 " forms." ² " They who know the law of gifts, declare, that things once
 " delivered as the price of goods sold; as wages; for [the] pleasure [of
 " hearing poets, musicians, or the like]; from natural affection; as an ac-
 " knowledgment to a benefactor; as a nuptial gift to a bride [or her fa-
 " mily]; and through *regard*, cannot be resumed." *Regard*, religious
 purposes. ³ " What has been given by men agitated with *fear*, *anger*, Gifts void.
 " lust, *grief*, or [the pain of] an incurable disease; or as a bribe, or in
 " jest, or *by mistake*, or through any *fraudulent practice*, must be consi-
 " dered as ungiven: So must any thing given by a minor, ⁴ an idiot, a
 " [slave or other] person not his own master; a *diseased man*, one *insane*,
 " or *intoxicated*, or in consideration of work unperformed." ⁵ " But
 " what shall be *given* ignorantly, to a bad man, called a good one, or for
 " an illegal act, must be considered as ungiven."

7. *Grief*; pain, misfortune; the interpretation is, afflicted with pain created
 by fear or other impulse: Whatever has been given by one excited by *fear*,
 of beating or the like, or by other causes; and in the same manner, what is
 given with the intention that it may be expended, from *anger* against brothers
 or other persons [the rightful heirs]: by *mistake*, as, when gold is given by
 mistake, when the intention was to give silver; *through fraudulent practice*,
 as if, ' The king were about to give a cow to *Devuduttu*, and it be given to
 ' some other man, supposed to be the right person by his assuming the dress
 ' of *Devuduttu*:' *by a diseased man*, one whose mind is unsettled by disease;
Terms of the text defined.
CXCVII.

1—Digest 2d, 95.

2—Digest 2d, 475.

3—Digest 2d, 161. Reports 1st, 31. Colebrooke on

Obligations. 26-45-48-50-232-249.

4—For "Minority" see Digest 1st, 293, 2d, 115.

Cole. on Oblig. 26. Reports 2d, 57-117-127. An idiot, and an insane person, seem incapable also by English Law, Cole. on Oblig. 207-22.

5—Digest 2d, 200. Cole. on Oblig. 59.

by *one intoxicated* with any substance or liquor which produces drunkenness; or *insane*, by the effects of the air, or from any other cause. *Given*, bestowed; what is given to a person who fails afterwards in the performance of any act, the donor [at the time of giving it] thinking, 'This person will 'do my work'¹: what has been given to those practising unlawful arts, under an idea that they will perform a lawful act: All these gifts may be reversed.

Such gifts
may be re-
sumed.

8. KATYAYUNU²: "What has been given by men under the impulse of *lust*, or anger, or by such as are not their own masters, or by one diseased, or *deprived of virility*, or inebriated, or of unsound mind, or *through mistake, or in jest*, may be taken back." *Through lust*, for the sake of seducing another man's wife. *Deprived of virility*, [womanishly] timid. *Given through mistake or in jest*, means as a bribe [*Ootkochu*].

Recovery
prohibited,
of a bribe
once given.

9. ³ "If a bribe be promised for any purpose, it shall by no means be given, although the consideration be performed." "But if it had at first been actually given, it shall be restored by forcible means; and a fine of eleven times as much is ordained by the son of GARGU and by the son of MUNOO." The nature of a bribe is thus exhibited by the SAME AUTHOR: ⁴ "Whatever is received for giving information of an [improper] acquaintance; of a criminal, of a man violating the rules of his class, or of an adulterer; for producing a man of depraved manners [ready to commit thefts or other crimes,] or for procuring a man to give false testimony, That is all denominated [*Ootkochu*] given on an illegal consideration."

Bribes def-
ined.

CXCVIII.
Fraudulent
acts to be
annulled.

10. MUNOO: ⁵ "When the Judge discovers a fraudulent pledge, or sale; a fraudulent gift, and acceptance, or in *whatever other case*

1—This is better explained in the Mit. leaf 10th, page 2d, line 10th, "Further, what is given thus, 'This man will do this my work,' that is, from hope of a profitable return."

2—Digest 2d, 197. Reporis 2d, 117.

Elem. 1st, 274.

4—Digest 2d, 194.

3—Digest 2d, 196, KATYAYUNU. Cole. on Oblig. 58. Strange's

5—Chap. 6th, v. 165. Strange's Elem. 1st, 265.

" he detects *fraud*, let him annul the whole transaction." *Fraud*, circumvention. *Or in whatever other case*, that is, in whosever business. The meaning is, the whole of that business in which fraud is detected shall be reversed. KATYAYUNU: ¹ " What a man has promised, in health " or in sickness, for a religious purpose, must be given; and if he die " without giving it, his son shall doubtless be compelled to deliver it." For a continuation of this subject, the DVAITU NIRNUYU, written by my *Gooroo*, must be referred to.

Legal promises binding, even on heirs.

CHAPTER X.

OF SERVICE,—[UBHYOOPETYU SHOOSHROOHA].

1. NARUDU: ² " When a man yields not the obedience he has promised, " it is called a breach of promised obedience; which is a title of law." CXIX. Servants are of three ranks, says BRUHUSPUTI: ³ " The soldier is the " highest of servants; the ploughman is the middlemost; the porter is " declared the lowest, and so is a servant employed in the business of " the household." NARUDU: ⁴ " He who shall be commissioned for " affairs, or for the superintendence of the family, should be considered " as a commissioned servant; and he is also called a family-servant [in " some instances]."

Servants of three degrees.

2. KATYAYUNU: ⁵ " BHRIGOO admits the servitude of one who, being " his own master, gives himself, as [the marriage of] a wife [selfgiven is " acknowledged:] slavery should be limited to three classes; never can " a *Brahmunu* become a slave." " The servitude of men of the military,

Slavery of all classes admitted, with exception of Brahmins.

¹—Digest 2d, 96.

²—Digest 2d, 204.

³—Digest 2d, 218.

⁴—Digest 2d, 220. See Bl. Com. 1st, 426. The English law admits four kinds.

⁵—Digest 2d, 254. See Bl. Com. 1st, 425, note 1.

“ commercial, and servile classes, who have forfeited their independence,
 “ may be in the direct, not in the inverse order, of the classes.” NARUDU: ¹
 “ In the inverse order of the classes, slavery is not legal.” KATYAYUNU: ²
 “ Where men of the three twice-born classes forsake religious mendicity,
 “ let the king banish a man of the sacerdotal class, and reduce to slave-
 “ ry a man of the *Kshutriyu* or military tribe, says BHUGOO.” The taking
 the word *Kshutriyu* or military class, intends the commercial and servile
 classes also, a part being put for the whole. The mode of banishing a
Brahmun is thus explained by DUKSHU and NARUDU: ³ “ If a man, after
 “ assuming religious mendicity, abide not by his duty, let the king cause
 “ him to be lacerated by the feet of dogs, and immediately banish him.”

What kinds
 of labor al-
 lowed and
 CC.
 what prohi-
 bited.

3. KATYAYUNU: ⁴ “ But even a man of equal class must not reduce
 “ a *Brahmunu* to slavery; yet a mild and learned man may employ in
 “ labor one inferior to himself in those qualities: still let not the highest
 “ twice-born man perform impure work.” MUNOO: ⁵ “ Both him of the
 “ military, and him of the commercial class, if distressed for a livelihood,
 “ let some wealthy *Brahmunu* support, obliging them, without harshness,
 “ to discharge their *appropriate duties*.” *Appropriate duties*, meaning res-
 pectable, and such as are suited to their class.

Illegal en-
 slavement
 with the
 punishment
 awarded for
 it.

4. KATYAYUNU: ⁶ “ He who seizes a woman of the sacerdotal class,
 “ he who sells her, and he who enslaves a woman of family, impelled by
 “ lust, or causes her to be approached by another, shall be amerced,
 “ and that [enslavement] is null.” “ The man who treats as a slave the
 “ nurse of an infant child, or a free woman, or the wife of his depen-
 “ dent, incurs the first amercement.” VISHNOO: ⁷ “ He who employs

1—Digest 2d, 253.

2—Digest 2d, 227. There is a variation in the reading of this text.

3—Digest 2d, 227.

4—Digest 2d, 254-5

5—Chap. 8th, v. 411. Strange's Elem. 1st, 135.

6—Digest 2d, 258.

7—Digest 2nd, 267.

" a man of the most elevated class in servile duty, shall be fined in the
 " highest amercement." KATYAYANU: ¹ " And he who attempts to sell an
 " obedient female slave [*Bhuktu*] ², though she resist the sale, and though
 " he be not distressed, but able to subsist, shall pay the first fine."

5. The distinctions in slaves are laid down by NARUDU: ³ " One born Slaves enumerated.
 " [of a female slave] in the house [of her master]; one bought; one re-
 " ceived [by donation]; one inherited [from ancestors]; one maintained
 " in a famine; and, like him, one pledged by a [former] master; one
 " relieved from great debt; one made captive in war; [a slave] won in
 " a stake; one [who has] offered [himself] in this form, ' I am thine;'
 " an apostate from religious mendicity; [a slave for a] stipulated [time];
 " One maintained in consideration of service [*Bhuktu*]; a slave for the cc1.
 " sake of his bride; and one self sold, are fifteen slaves declared by
 " the law."

6 ⁴: " Of those [slaves], the first four are not [of right] released from Who of them are not capable of emancipation.
 " slavery: unless they be [emancipated] by the indulgence of their masters,
 " their servitude is hereditary. That low man, who, being independent,
 " sells himself, is the vilest of slaves; he also cannot be released from
 " slavery." ⁵ " Among those, whoever rescues his master from imminent Exception.
 " danger of his life, shall be released from slavery, and shall receive the
 " share of a son." YANYUWULKYU: " He who, having become a *Sunyasi*,
 " falls from that state, shall remain the slave of the prince during the
 " rest of his life."

7. NARUDU: ⁶ " One maintained in a famine is released from servitude Slavery voidable, on what conditions.
 " on giving a pair of oxen." " One pledged [is] also [released] when his

1—Digest 2d, 258.

2—The word '*Bhuktu*' means also "serving for maintenance."

3—Digest 2d, 224-25. Colebrooke on Obligations, 26.

4—Digest 2d, 231.

5—Digest 2d, 241. Reports 1st, 372, note.

6—Digest 2d, 243. The last half of the couplet is

here omitted; it is as follows: "for what was consumed in a famine, is not discharged by labor [alone]."

“ master redeems him, by discharging the debt”¹⁻²: “ Paying the debt
 “ with interest, a debtor is released from servitude.”³: “ One who offered
 “ himself in this form, ‘ I am thine’; one made captive in war, and a slave
 “ won in a stake, are emancipated on giving a *substitute* equally capable
 “ of labour.”⁴: “ A slave for a fixed period is also emancipated, by
 “ fulfilling the stipulated term.”⁵: “ One maintained in consideration of
 “ service is immediately released on relinquishing his subsistence; and a
 “ slave for the sake of his *bride* is emancipated by divorcing his wife.”
Substitute, a surety, deputy. *Bride*, a female slave.

Slavery in
 what cases
 void, ab
 initio.

CCII.

8. YANYUWULKYU:⁶ “ One enslaved by force, and also one sold by
 “ robbers, is released from slavery.” NARUDU:⁷ “ *One not his own*
 “ *master*, who, having given himself [to one man] in this form, ‘ I am thine,’
 “ goes [to another], does not obtain his wish; the former owner may
 “ reclaim him.” *One not his own master*, the slave of another. The word
slave, used throughout on this subject, being not specially confined to the
 masculine gender, must therefore be understood as affecting all rules also
 for female slaves.

Reason for
 emancipat-
 ing females.

9. A reason for enfranchising female slaves is declared by KATYAYUNU:⁸
 “ If a man approach his own female slave, and she bear him a son, she
 “ must in consideration of her *progeny*, be enfranchised with her child.”
Progeny, offspring; meaning, that she becomes thereby qualified for liberty.

Rite of
 emancipa-
 tion.

10. NARUDU:⁹ “ Let the benevolent man, who desires to emancipate
 “ his own slave, take a vessel of water from his shoulder, and instantly
 “ break it, sprinkling his head with water containing rice and flowers;
 “ and, thrice calling him free, [let the master] dismiss him with his face

1—Digest 2d, 245. Here again, the last half couplet is omitted: “ but if [the creditor] take him in payment, he
 “ becomes a purchased slave.”

2—Digest 2d, 245.

3—Digest, 2nd, 246.

4—Digest 2d, 245. This should come in after “ Paying the debt with interest,” &c.

5—Digest 2d, 247.

6—Digest 2d, 239.

7—Digest 2d, 237. The translation is varied here, to suit the gloss.

8—Digest 2d, 247.

9—Digest 2d, 248.

" towards the east: thenceforward let him be called 'one cherished by his master's favor; his food may be eaten, and his favours accepted; and he is respected by worthy men."

11. KATYAYUNU¹: "A free woman, or one who is not a slave [of the same master; for this word, *Udasi*, may bear either sense], becoming the bride of a slave, also becomes a slave [to her husband's owner]; for her husband is her lord, and that lord is subject to a master." "What ever goods belong to a slave, his master is declared by law to have dominion over them." ²

How any free woman may become a slave.

CHAPTER XI.

NON PAYMENT OF WAGES,—[VETUNADANUM]

1. NARUDU: ³ "The rule and the act of payment, and non-payment, of the wages or hire of servants, are now declared, called in law, Non-payment of wages or hire."

Non payment of wages.

CCIII.

2. YANYUWULKYU: ⁴ "He who causes work to be performed without fixing the wages, shall be compelled by the king to give a tenth part of the [profit arising from] commerce, cattle, or grain."

Rates of wages, when not stipulated.

3. This relates to light work—For if the work be heavy, BRUHUS-PUTI says: ⁵ "Let the man who guides the ploughshare have a third or a fifth part [of the grain]." "Let (the ploughman), to whom food and vesture are given, take a fifth; and let him who is supported by the

According to the work.

¹—Digest 2d, 252-3.

²—Digest 2d, 252. The last hemistich is here [it would seem fraudulently] omitted: "but that master has no right to the goods which are acquired by public sale." See particularly Calabrooke on Obligations, 30-31-232.

³—Digest 2d, 259.

⁴⁻⁵—Digest 2d, 261-64. See Tomlinson, and Burn, tit. "Servants."

"profit (alone), receive a third part of the grain produced." *Food and vesture*, a servant boarded with receipt of food and clothes.

Rules affecting the servant in regard to work.

4. NARUDU: ¹ "A servant who refuses to perform the work he has undertaken, shall be compelled to fulfil his agreement, first paying him his wages; but, if he persist in his refusal after receiving his wages, he shall forfeit twice their amount." MUNOO ²: "That hired servant or workman, who, not from any disorder but from insolence, fails to perform his work according to his agreement, shall be fined eight *ruktikas*. ³ and his wages or hire shall not be paid." He adds: ⁴ "Yet, whether he be sick or well, if the work stipulated be not performed [by another for him, or by himself], his whole wages are forfeited, though the work want but a little of being complete." ⁵: "But, if he be really ill, and when restored to health shall perform his work according to his original bargain, he shall receive his pay even after a very long time."

CCIV. So VISHNOO: ⁶ "A servant, [or workman by time], who leaves the work before the expiration of the full term, shall forfeit the whole price of his labour, and pay one hundred *punus* to the king."

Rules affecting the master.

Damage or loss by servants, how to be estimated and when made good.

5. AGAIN: "If the master dismiss the servant before the full time has passed, he shall pay him his whole wages, and a hundred *punus* to the king, unless the servant were in fault." VRIDDHU MUNOO: ⁷ "A servant shall pay the full value of what he has lost by mere inattention; twice the value of what he has lost by gross negligence or *malice*; but he shall not be forced to pay any thing for what robbers have seized, for what has been burned, or for what an inundation has *carried away*, [unless he were himself blameable]." *Malice*, enmity. *Carried away*, swept

¹—Digest 2d, 267.

²—Chap. 8th, 215. Digest 2d, 269.

³—As. Res. 5th, 91.

⁴—Chap. 8th, 217. Digest 2d, 270.

⁵—Chap. 8th, 216. Digest 2d, 271.

⁶—Digest 2d, 271. Reports 2d, 237.

⁷—Digest 2d, 272.

away. YANYUWULKYU: ¹ " He who raises obstacles on solemn occasions
 " shall pay twice the amount of his wages; one who declines when
 " on the road [shall be compelled to pay] the seventh part of the wages,
 " or the fourth part, if he leave him on the way." VRIDDHA MUNOO: ²
 " Should a merchant [having hired a servant for a certain journey], sell
 " his goods by the way, and discharge the servant, his [wages] must be
 " paid; but the servant shall receive half only of the hire." KATYA-
 YUNU: ³ " And if the goods *be stopped*, or seized on the way, the servant
 " shall receive wages for so much of the way as has been passed by
 " him." ⁴ " The master, who leaves in the way a tired or sick servant,
 " without taking care of him in a village for three days, shall pay the
 " first or lowest amercement." *Be stopped*, be attached by the king's
 order.

Cases of de-
pots about
wages and
discharge.

6. BRUHUSPUTI: ⁵ " If a servant, by the command of his master, and
 " for his benefit only, do an improper act, the offence shall be imputed to
 " the master." ⁶ " The master, who pays not the hire of labour after
 " the work is performed, shall be compelled by the king to pay it, as
 " well as a proportionate amercement."

Liability of
the master.

ccv.

7. NARUDU: ⁷ " The owner of goods, who hires *carriages or beasts*
 " of burden, and takes them not, shall be compelled to pay a fourth part
 " of the hire; or the full amount, if he leave them on the road." *Car-*
riages, conveyances of all sorts. *Beasts* of burden; horses and other
 animals, carrying burthens on their own [backs]. KATYAYUNU: ⁸ " He
 " who hires, at a fixed price, an elephant, a horse, a bull or cow, an ass,
 " or a camel, shall be made to pay for the hire of it as long as he delays

Rules relat-
ing to hire,
of carriage,
and
beasts of
burden.

¹—Digest 2d, 274-75.

²—Digest 2d, 277.

³—Digest 2d, 278.

⁴—Digest 2d, 279. Moore's Index, Term Reports 1st, 76. Tomlins, and Burn, tit. Servants.

⁵—Digest 2d, 273. Bl. Com. 1st, 429. " Qui facit per alium facit per se." Tomlins, tit. " Servants."

⁶—Digest 2d, 279.

⁷—Digest 2d, 277. q. v.

⁸—Digest 2d, 283. where it is attributed to NARUDU.

Rules for
Landlord
and Tenant

" to restore the cattle, having used it according to agreement " NARUDU: 1
" He who dwells in a house which he built on the ground of another man,
" and for which he pays *rent*, shall take with him, when he leaves it,
" the thatch, the wood, the bricks, and the like. But if he live, without
" paying rent, on the ground of another, and there be no agreement, he
" shall, when he quits it, give the thatch, the timber, and the bricks which
" he has expended, to the landlord." *Rent*, hire.

—•••••—

CHAPTER XII.

BREACH OF COMPACT,—[SUMVIDU VYUTIKRUMU].

Breach of
Compact.

CCVL

1. NARUDU: 2 " The general rule, settled among irreligious men
" [*Pakhundu*], and among *citizens* [*Naigumu*], and the *like*, is named a
" compact; and the title of law concerning disputes arising thereon, is
" called Breach of compact." *Pakhundu*, persons pursuing commerce or
the like, [and] deviating from the ordinances of the *Vedas*. *Citizens*,
those who do not act contrary [to the *Vedas*]. From the term *the like*,
we must include those skilled in the three *Vedas*.

Royal esta-
blishments.

2. The part to be taken by the king in these matters is laid down
by BRAHUSPUTI: 3 " Assembling *Brahmunus* endowed with knowledge of
" the *Veda*, *Shrotriyus* [or learned teachers of the scripture], and priests

1—Digest 2d, 281. q. v. Strange's Elem. 1st, 293.

2—Digest 2d, 266-92-3.

Ellis's Lectures " *Kooliku Sabha* from *Kooliku*, heads of tribes or families, A court composed of
" ancient persons of the same *Gotru* as the plaintiff and dependant. The *Ganu*, *Koolu*, and *Kooliku*,
" courts took cognizance, especially, of what is termed technically, *Samo'du vyutikrumum*, all transgres-
" sions against the discipline and peculiar customs of the tribe or family; they had, also, jurisdiction,
" probably to a limited extent, in civil causes between the members of the tribe or family: but they had
" no jurisdiction in criminal cases, and did not, therefore, resemble the domestic courts of the Romans,
" in which the *Pater-familias* presided, and punished the faults of his wife and children even with
" death." See Chap. 1st, Sec. 1st, para. 10th.

3—Digest 2d, 283.

“ who keep a perpetual fire for oblations [*Ugnihotri*], let the king establish them in that place, and assign their subsistence:” “ Let him grant to them, in his own dominions, houses and land *exempt from taxes*, declaring by a written grant, that the royal *dues are remitted.*” *Exempt*; They from whom taxes are not to be taken, are *exempt from taxes.* *Remitted dues*: *Remitted*, abandoned: *dues*, the fruits of the earth, and the like; meaning, these [are to be remitted] to them. And the laws for these persons, the *Shrotriyus* and the rest, are declared by YANYUWULKYU: ¹ “ Duties which are stipulated, or seasonable [for *Samuyiku* may bear either sense], or prescribed by the king, and which are not inconsistent with their own [regular] duties, should also be diligently observed [by those priests, and enforced by the king].”

3. NARUDU ²: “ Let the king maintain the associations of the *Pakhundu*, of the *Naigumu*, of *joint companies* [*Shreni*], of *separate trades* [*Poogu*], and of *various tribes* [*Vratu*], and the like, both in a place of difficult access, and in a frequented spot.” Associations of persons of different casts for the carrying on of one kind of trade or business between them, are *joint companies*. Among them again, those who are associated by different kinds of work, are called *separate trades*. *Various tribes*, are associations of near kinsmen, connexions, or gentile relations; the same which are also denominated *kool*, or family. Of the *Pakhundu* and *Naigumu*, we have before spoken [para. 1]. Associations of all these, from the *Pakhundus* to the *Vratu* inclusive, are all denominated ‘companies.’

Associations enumerated and defined.

4. The punishment for a departure from the rules laid down among them, is declared by YANYUWULKYU ³: “ Him who embezzles the property of the company, and him who violates his engagement, let the king banish from the realm, after confiscating all his effects.”

Punishment for members.

1—Digest 2d, 287. 2—Digest 2d, 203. The words of the text are retained, to avoid perplexity: The MUYOOKHU, and MITAKSHURA, vary in their acceptation of the term *Naigumu*, for which “trader” seems the most common meaning, See Chap. 17th, para. 2d, For the these last terms see Chap. 1st, Sec. 1st, para. 10th, and references. 3—Digest 2d, 287. Reports 2d, 437.

CHAPTER XIII

SECTION I.

RESCISSION OF PURCHASE,—[KREETANOOSHUYU].

Rescission
of Pur-
chase.

CCVIII.

Term allow-
ed for trial
of articles.

Excepted
cases.

1. NARUDU¹: “ He who is dissatisfied with his purchase, after buying
“ a commodity for a [just] price, is called a rescinder of purchase, [which
“ is] a title of judicial procedure.”

2. The limit for examination of an article is fixed by the SAME AUTHOR²:
“ Milch cattle should be examined within three days; beasts of burden,
“ within five; but the examination of pearls, gems, and coral must be
“ within seven days; of male slaves, within half a month; of females,
“ within one month; of all seeds, within ten days; of iron, and wearing
“ apparel, within one day.” KATYAYUNU:³ “ Rescission of a sale of land
“ within ten days [is permitted] whether to the buyer or the seller.”
BRUHUSPUTI⁴: “ Within those times, if a blemish be any where discovered
“ in the commodity purchased, it must be returned to the seller, and the
“ purchaser shall take back the price.”

3. KATYAYUNU⁵: “ But an unexamined commodity being bought,
“ and afterwards proved to have a blemish, it must be returned to its
“ owner within the limited time, and not otherwise.” If he took the
article after personal examination, then, says NARUDU⁶: “ If a man,
“ having bought for a just price any [cloth or other consumable] commodity
“ [except seed grain], should suspect that he had made a bad purchase, he
“ may return it on that very day to the seller, unless it be diminished.”
“ The buyer who returns it on the second day, shall give [the seller] a

1—Digest 2d, 309. See Strange 1st, 301-304, for this and the succeeding Section.

2—Digest 2d, 314-15. Reports 1st, 404-5.

MITRODURY, 134 1st, 1st.

is followed here.

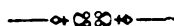
3—The same hemistich, and no more is in the Vasa-

4—Digest 2d, 315-6. The second reading of which, ‘*sanjeyate*,’

5—Digest 2d, 316.

6—Digest 2d, 309-10.

“ thirtieth part of the price ; on the third day, twice as much [or a fifteenth] ;
 “ and, after that, it is absolutely his own.” NARUDU ¹: “ But a mantle,
 “ that has been worn, and is tattered and soiled, yet is bought with those
 “ known blemishes, cannot be returned to the seller.”



SECTION II.

RESCISSION OF SALE,—[VIKREEYASUMPRUDANUM].

1. NARUDU: ² “ When a vendible thing, sold for [a just] price, is not
 “ delivered to the purchaser, this is called ‘ Non delivery of a thing sold,’
 “ a title of judicial procedure.”

Rescission
of sale.

CCIX.

2. YANYUWULKYU: ³ “ He who, having received the price of a thing
 “ sold, delivers not that thing to the buyer, shall be compelled to deliver
 “ it together with interest ; or, among those who trade to foreign coun-
 “ tries, with the *foreign profit*.” *Foreign*, of another country. Its *profit*,
 that is, the profit on a commodity, the produce of a foreign country.
 THE SAME AUTHOR: ⁴ “ Should a commodity sold, but not delivered on
 “ demand [with tender of payment], be injured by the act of God or of
 “ the king, the loss shall fall on the vender.”

Rules affect-
ing the
vender,

3. BUT AGAIN ⁵: “ And if a loss arise by the fault of the vendee, on
 “ him alone shall it fall.” NARUDU ⁶: “ But if a vendee refuse to accept
 “ the commodity which he has bought, when it is offered, the vender
 “ commits no offence if he sell it to another.”

and the
vendee.

1—2—Digest 2d, 317.

3—Digest 2d, 319-20.

4—Digest 2d, 324.

5—Digest 2d, 324. Reports 1st, 404. The last hemistich of one text is here tacked
on to the end of the other.

6—Digest 2d, 327. Reports 1st, 404.

Sales void.

Rules for
decision.

4. YANYUWULKYU says: ¹ " That which has been sold by a drunken, " or by an insane man; or for a base price; also that which has been sold " by one not independent, and by an idiot, must be given up and restored " by the purchaser." All these rules must be understood, as referring to a contract made by the seller to this effect: ' The price being paid, I will give it to you alone, and to no other,' [as is evident] from the following text of NARUDU ²: " This rule has been declared for vendible commodities, of " which the price has been paid [or tendered]; but where it has not been " paid [or tendered], there is no injury to the buyer by [delaying the delivery] " unless there have been a special agreement [as to the times of delivery " and payment]."

Punishment
of fraud.

5. On the subject of selling a damaged article, YANYUWULKYU says ³: " The dishonest man, who sells the commodity knowing it's blemish, [but " not disclosing it], shall pay double the price of it [to the vendee], and a " fine of equal amount [to the king]."

—*—*—*—

CHAPTER XIV.

DISPUTES BETWEEN MASTER AND HERDSMEN,—[SWAMIPALU VIVADU].

Disputes
between
master and
herdsmen.
CCXI.Punishment
for faults.

1. When damage occurs to kine, or other animals, through the fault of their keeper, YANYUWULKYU says: ⁴ " On the loss [of a beast] by the " fault of the herdsman, the fine ordained for him is thirteen *punnas* and " a half; and [he shall pay] *the value* [of the beast] to its owner." *The value*, of the cow, or whatever animal it may be.

1—This is a text of BRUHUSPATI, according to the VEERMITRODUYU [136—1st, 5th.] and is attributed also to him in the Digest 2d, 328, or at least one very like it. Reports 2d, 118.

2—Digest 2d, 319.

3—Digest 2d, 325, where it is attributed to BRUHUSPATI.

4—Digest 2d, 343. and the commentary.

2. The mode of certifying the death of any animal, is thus laid down by MUNOO: ¹ "When cattle die, let him carry to his master their ears, " their hides, their tails, the skin below their navels, their tendons, and " the liquor exuding from their foreheads: let him also point out their " marks." Marks, their horns, or other known marks, according to MUNOO.

Mode of
certifying
deaths in
the herd.

3. The portion of ground [to be set apart] to serve as pasturage for kine, and the like, is defined by YANYUWULKYU ²: "Let a space be left " between village and village, in breadth four hundred cubits; let it be " eight hundred cubits round a town, and sixteen hundred round a city." Space [*Purinahu*], land appropriated for pasturage of cattle and the like. ³ In the same sense also, a similar word [*Puriharu*] is used by MUNOO: ⁴ "On all sides of a village or small town, let a space [*Puriharu*] be left for " pasture, four hundred cubits." Some author has defined a village, as a place where several artificers and husbandmen are found: a town [*Khurwutu*], as a place surrounded with a strong thorn hedge.

Pasture
lands of
townships.

4. When the grain or property of another is eaten by cattle, fines must be paid by their owner, according to this ordinance of YANYUWULKYU ⁵: " [The owner of] a female buffalo, doing damage to grain, shall be fined " eight *mashus* ⁶; of a cow, half that [amercement]; and of a goat or sheep, " half [again] of this amercement." " For cattle eating and lying down in " the field, the fine is double the amercement mentioned; it is also the " same, if they trespass on *preserved lands*, and the fine for an ass or a " camel, is the same with that for a female buffalo." ⁷; " As much grain as " shall be destroyed, so much produce shall be [paid] to the husbandmen;

Loss by
trespass to
be made
good by the
owner, with
a fine for
the offence.

CCXII.

1—Chap. 8th, v. 234. Digest 3d, 347. There is a variation in the reading here, *unke*, marks, for *unga*, limbs.

2—Digest 2d, 348. 3—In practice, this is well known, the ground so set apart being termed *Kotra* in Gujurat.

4—Chap. 8th, v. 237. Digest 2d, 347--8.

5—Digest 3d, 361--2

6—As Res 5th, 91. Digest 2d, 358.

7—Digest 2d, 366.

" the herdsman shall be scourged; but the owner of the cattle incurs the
 " fine already declared." *Preserved lands*, a place for collecting or pre-
 serving grass, wood, or the like.

Excep-
 tions, with
 the reason
 for them.

5. An exception to this is stated by OOSHUNA :¹ " Kine are not liable
 " to fine for trespass on jubilees, and they are equally exempt at the season
 " of obsequies." VYASU : " O lion [lord] of kings, he whose property
 " has been snatched away and enjoyed by a *Brahmun*, or by a very indigent
 " relation, or by kine, receives greater reward, than he would obtain from
 " the *Vajupeyu* sacrifice." OOSHUNA² : " Neither ancestors, nor deities,
 " taste the offering of that man who demands compensation for corn
 " destroyed by cows."



CHAPTER XV.

BOUNDARY DISPUTES,—[*SEEMA VIVADU*.]

Boundary
 disputes.
 CCXIII.

Mode of de-
 fining bound-
 aries.

Requisite
 witnesses.

1. BRUHUSPUTI tells the means of knowing boundaries : " The follow-
 " ing substances, cow-dung, bone, husks of grain, charcoal, large stones,
 " potsherds, sand, bricks, cows'-hair, cotton³, bones, and ashes, hav-
 " ing been placed in vessels, shall be deposited under ground at the
 " extremities of the boundary."

2. YANYUWULKYU here shews the nature of the witnesses required :
 " Men inhabiting a neighbouring village [*Samunta*], or that in which the
 " disputed ground is situated, being in number either four, eight, or ten,
 " having put on a chaplet of red flowers, and a red dress, and taking

1—Digest 2d, 372 where certain other animals are altogether exempted.

2—Digest 2d, 354.

3—Or cotton seeds, according to the *VERMITHODUYU* [139 2d, 10th,] which has been consulted for the transla-
 tion of the other terms : a text of the SAME AUTHOR is there found, but transposed and read differently :
 " Stones, bones, Cow's hair, husks of grain, ashes, potsherds, cowdung, bricks, charcoal, gravel, sand."

" some of the earth [on their heads], shall point out the true boundary."

NARUDU: " A single man shall not determine a [disputed] boundary, even if he be worthy of confidence; for the weighty nature of this business requires that such fact be settled by many." BRUHUSPUTI: " In default of the marks for knowing the boundary, even a single man, who is virtuous and upright, and mutually agreed upon by both parties, having put on a chaplet of red flowers, and red clothes, and taking some earth on his head, and having fasted, may point out the boundary."

One witness inadmissible,

except under certain circumstances and limitations.

3. KATYAYUNU: " On three occasions, the act of God or the king is to be looked for: in walking over a boundary, undergoing the ordeal of holy water, and likewise in swearing by holy feet; [in the first] within six weeks; [in the second] a fortnight; and [in the third], within seven days."

Divination to be attended to.

4. MUNOO: ¹ " Veracious witnesses who give evidence as the law requires, are absolved from their sins; but such, as give it unjustly, shall each be fined two hundred *punus*." NARUDU: " Now if neighbouring villagers have spoken what is not true in deciding a [contested] boundary, they shall be fined, all separately, in the middling amercement, by the king." KATYAYUNU: " Where many are assembled [for this purpose], and they do not give an unanimous verdict [or testimony], whether from fear or hope of reward, they shall be made to pay the highest amercement." ²

Punishment of false evidence.

CCXIV.

5. YANYUWULKYU: " In default of assessors, or of marks for distinguishing it, the king ought of his own accord to define the boundary." MUNOO: ³ " If the boundary cannot be [otherwise] ascertained, let the king,

Proceedings in default of evidence.

1—Chap. 8th, 257.

2—In the VERMITRODUYU [141 : 2d, 14th] this is elucidated by another hemistich of the SAME AUTHOR: " If it be so delivered from want of knowledge, let the boundary be examined afresh; but if there be a contradiction in what they have delivered, they shall be fined in the highest amercement."

3—Chap. 8th, 266.

“ knowing what is just, [that is, without partiality, and] consulting the
 “ future benefit of both parties, mark a boundline between their lands:
 “ this is a settled law.”

Possession,
 held to be a
 title to cer-
 tain conve-
 niences.

6. THE SAME AUTHOR says: ¹ “ Reckoning from the time of entry,
 “ even as a house-door, a shop [or market], and *other places*, may
 “ have been enjoyed by any one, according to that time and manner shall
 “ he possess them, and shall not be removed.” KATYAYUNU also: “ *An*
 “ *enclosure; a drain; a projection*, and small apertures, let them not
 “ stop up, or interfere with; let him who stops a permanent watercourse
 “ or the scite of a house, receive punishment.” *An enclosure*, the foun-
 dation of a wall. *A drain*, a road for the exit of water. *A projection*,
 is, according to MUDUNU, ‘ a place for sitting in, made of wood or other
 ‘ materials, not touching the ground, but built out, from a house or other
 ‘ place.’ In some copies they read [*dhoomu nishkasu*], ‘ a passage for
 ‘ smoke, [a chimney]’ instead of [*bhrumu nishkasu*] ‘ a drain, and a
 ‘ projection.’ It then would mean, small apertures, as bull’s eyes, or
 the like, for the purpose of letting out smoke. By the phrase *other*
places, we must understand, the walls of other people, and the
 like.

Prohibition
 against
 erection of
 nuisances.

CCXV.

7. THE SAME AUTHOR says: “ From and after the date of entry [or
 “ possession], such things are not at any time to be made, neither shall
 “ they make a passage for sight, nor a water course, into the habitation
 “ of another.” BRUHUSPUTI: “ Never let a *necessary*, a fire-place [or heap];
 “ a sink, or dirty water, [or a vessel of it], be at any time placed *very*
 “ *near* to the house of another.” *A necessary*, the place for voiding
 impurities. *Very near*, in close contact. KATYAYUNU: “ Places set apart
 “ for depositing urine, fæces, and water; a fire-place and a sink [or pit],

¹—It is not found in MUNOO’s Institutes, and the VEERMITRODUYU attributes it, by implication, to
 BRUHUSPUTI.

" let them situate, when they make them, at the distance of two cubits
" from the houses of other people."

8. BRUHUSPUTI: " That [road], by which men and animals have come
" and gone unprevented, is called a highway [*Sunsurunum*]: it is not to be
" shut up by any one whomsoever." NARUDU: " Let them not stop up a
" thoroughfare [or junction of four roads, *Chutooshputhu*], a place dedica-
" ted to the gods, or the king's highway, [*Raju margu*], by [making there]
" a place for sweepings, a pit, a drain, a heap, [of rubbish] or the like."
KATYAYUNU: " That place through which all [sorts of] people are con-
" stantly moving, is a thoroughfare [*Chutooshputhu*]: that road which has
" not at any time been stopped up, is called the king's highway."

Definition
of thorough-
fare, and
highway.

9. BRUHUSPUTI: " Let one *mashiku* be the fine of him, who there
" makes either a stoppage [with carts], or a pit [or sink], or a plantation
" of trees, and likewise for him who wilfully voids ordure there." MUNOO: ¹
" He, who shall drop his ordure on the king's highway, except in case of
" necessity, shall pay two *punus*, and immediately remove the filth."
KATYAYUNU: " Let him who defiles a pond, a royal garden, or a holy
" piece of water, with ordure, be made to remove the defilement, and be
" punished in the lowest amercement."

Fine for
committing
nuisances in
them.

10. YANYUWULKYU: " For altering the divisions [of joint lands], as
" well as for transgressing the boundary [of others], and taking away a
" man's land, let the fine be, in order, the lowest, the highest, and the
" middling, scale."

Fine for
transgres-
sing boun-
daries, &c.

CCXVI.

11. MUNOO: ² " He who, by means of intimidation, shall possess him-
" self of a house, a pool, a field, or a garden, shall be fined five hundred
" *punus*; but only two hundred, if he trespassed through ignorance of
" the right."

and for sei-
zure by in-
timidation.

¹—Chap. 9th, 288.

²—Chap. 8th, 264.

Rights in
the produce
of bounda-
ries def-
ined.

12. KATYAYUNU: ¹ " The fruit and flowers of trees produced upon
" the boundary between two fields, are declared to be joint property, per-
" taining in common to the masters of the two fields." KATYAYUNU: ²
" But where the branches of trees growing in one man's field, be spread
" out over that of another, then he shall be considered as the owner [of
" their produce], over whose field they are so situated." YANYUWUL-
KYU: " If a man, not even giving notice to the owner, set up a bridge
" upon [another person's] field, the enjoyment of its profits is the right
" of the landlord, or, on failure of him, of the king."

Erection of
bridges al-
lowed on
the ground
of another.

18. THE SAME AUTHOR says: " A bridge ³ which diffuses general
" benefits [must not be put a stop to] where the inconvenience is slight;
" and a well, which takes off from the land of another, if the ground [so
" lost] is small, and the supply of water great." ' Must not be put a
stop to,' should here be added. NARUDU also: " But a bridge in the
" middle of another man's field must not be objected to, if the benefit be
" great, and the damage small, and a profit be expected above the loss."

Repair of
them gives
no title.

NARUDU: " If any one, without asking the owner, repair a bridge built
" long before but fallen into decay, ⁴, that person in such case shall not

Punishment
for neglect-
ing to culti-
vate land
held under
lease.

" enjoy the profits of it." VYASU: " If any one, having taken a field [in
" hire] shall neither till it himself nor cause it to be tilled, he shall be
" made to pay to the owner of the land the vegetable *products* of that
" field, and a fine equal to it to the king." ⁵ *Products*, profits suitable
to the powers of the land.

1—2—Halbed 188. Strange's Elem. 1st, 203.

3—Mit. 65. 1st.—Bridges [*Setoo*] are declared by

NARUDU to be of two kinds; " Bridges of two sorts are known: the one open, and the other confined:
" when for the passage of water, it is open; that which is closed, is for the stoppage [of water]."

4—In the MITAKSHUR, it is read *Ootsumnum*; in the VERNITRODUYU, *Ootpunnum*; the former of which is
followed here.

5—See Wilks's Mysore vol. 1st, p. 128.

CHAPTER XVI.

SECTION I.

ABUSE,—[FAKPAROOSHYUM].

1. BRUHUSPUTI: "That is reckoned the first scale in abusive language where, *without any thing* specific, disgraceful accusation of country, town, or family, is made." "False accusation, of connexion with the sister, or the mother, of another; [or] of a sin in the minor degree, is called the second degree of wordy abuse, by those skilled in the *Skastru*." "Accusation of [using] forbidden food, or drink; the charging with a mortal sin; and *spreading abroad* very deep secrets, is termed the highest misuse of language." *Without any thing*, means, 'mere mention made, but without specifying any thing so as to identify the thing [or person] meant.' *Spreading abroad*, divulging.

Abuse,
defined to
be of three
degrees.
CCXVII.

2. VISHNOO: "For loud abuse of one of the same class, a man is to be fined twelve *punas*." In another SMRITI, it is said: "When a couple of persons stand mutually charged with the offence of abuse, and no difference is observable [in their respective guilt], the punishment [the guardian of good behaviour] of both shall be equal." NARUDU: "He who commences an abusive quarrel, shall most certainly be held to be blameable, and also he who in retort is guilty of such improper conduct; but the man who first began is the principal offender."

Punishment
of it in vari-
ous cases.

The aggressor to re-
ceive most.

3. MUNOO: "A Soldier defaming a priest, shall be fined a hundred

Difference
of punish-
ment varies

1—Macnaghten 446.

2—Chap. 9th, 267. Ellis's Lectures. "We had occasion to observe the misappre-

hension which prevailed with respect to the exemption of *Brahmins* from capital punishment. This is one only of the innumerable misconceptions of their situation in Hindoo Society, which has obtained among foreign nations from the earliest times. Not the least gross of these, is that which ascribes to

as the class
of the par-
ties.

" *punus*; a *merchant*, [thus offending], an hundred and fifty, or two hun-
" dred: but [for such an offence] a *mechanick* or servile man shall be
" whipped." BRUHUSPUTI: " The punishment of a *Brahmun* for giving
" abuse to a *Kshutriyu*, shall be fifty *punus*; thus, if to a *Vaishyu*, the half
" of fifty; if to a *Shoodru*, thirteen and a half." With respect to a
" *Shoodru*, the SAME AUTHOR says: " He who makes known the ordi-
" nances of religion, and he who joins in reading the *Vedus*, or is abusive
" towards *Brahmans*, shall be punished by having his tongue cut out."

CCXVIII.

Punishment
for abuse of
venerable
persons.

4. MUNOO: ¹ " He shall be fined a hundred [*punus*], who defames his
" mother, his father, his wife, his *brother*, his father in law, or his
" preceptor; and he who gives not his preceptor the way." *Brother*,
his elder brother, because of his companionship with the father, and the
rest. According to the MITAKSHURA, and other authorities, punishment
[should follow abuse] against a mother and the rest, even though they
deserved it; of a wife, provided she be not in fault.

Threats of
actual inju-
ry.

5. YANYUWULKYU: " Let punishment to the amount of an hundred
" *punus*, be inflicted for threatened injury to the arm, neck, eyes, or thigh;
" and the half of it, for [the like injury to] the foot, nose, ears, the
" hand, or the like. If this [threat] be uttered by a powerless person,
" he need only be fined ten *punus*, but if he have the power to perform

" the whole body a Sacerdotal character; and which Sir W. Jones has unaccountably countenanced, by
" translating, in the Institutes of Munoo, the words used to designate an individual of the first caste
" [*Brahmunu* and *Viprah*] "priest," and the feminine of them [*Brahmuna* and *Vipra*] "priestess."
" The latter mistake is particularly remarkable, as the wives of *Brahmans*, though they assist in the pri-
" vate devotions of their family, not only never officiate as priestesses, but have no part in the public
" ceremonies of religion, except as spectators." It may be further remarked, that the second and third
tribes, of *Kshutriyu* and *Vaishyu*, which he translates *Soldier*, and *Merchant*, no longer exist in a pure
state, and that the *Soldiers* and *Merchants* of the present day are, in the eye of their own law, lower than
the real *Shoodru*, being of the *Vunu Shunkuru*, or Mixed classes.

1—Chap. 8th, 275. where the reading is ' *tunnyum*, son,' instead of ' *Srusoorum*, father-in-law,' as here, and in
the VEERMITRODUYU, and MITAKSHURA.

" his threat, let him be made to give security for the safety of him
 " [threatened]."

6. THE SAME AUTHOR says: " Any one abusing another thus, ' I have
 " criminal connexion with thy mother, or thy sister,' let the king oblige
 " to pay a fine of twenty-five *punus*. The highest punishment [shall be
 " the portion] for him, who abuses a *Brahmun* learned in the three *Vedas*,
 " the king, or the gods." NARUDU: " A man calling a degraded man
 " fallen; or taxing a thief with being such again, commits no fault: but
 " if falsely, he shall obtain double blame." YANYUWULKYU: " He, who
 " contemptuously heaps ridiculous compliments, whether true, or untrue,
 " or ludicrously distorted, upon persons wanting a limb, or diseased in
 " their organs, shall be fined thirteen *punus* and a half."

Indecent
abuse, &c.

CCXIX.

7. OOSHUNA: " He who confesses, ' Such a thing was said by me from
 " ignorance, carelessness, envy, or affection; I will not say so again,' may
 " be fairly considered deserving of only half the fine."

Mitigation
in cases of
confession.

SECTION II.

ASSAULT,—[DUNDU PAROOSHYUM].

1. NARUDU: " Injury inflicted upon the limbs of another, with the
 " hand, foot, weapons, or other thing, and defiling him with ashes, or the
 " like, is called actual affray."

Assault, de-
fined.

2. BRUHUPUTI: " The man who, having received abuse, retorts abuse;
 " or, being beaten, returns the blow; and he who beats one doing him some
 " wrong, does by no means thereby become liable to punishment."

Self de-
fence per-
mitted.

3. KATYAYUNU: " BHARGOO has ordained, that the highest punishment
 " shall be inflicted for cutting off an ear, a nose, a foot, the eyes, tongue, the
 " penis, or a hand; the middling degree for breaking [or wounding] any of

Degrees of
assault de-
fined.

CCXX.

“ them.” YANYUWULKYU: “ A fine of ten *punus*, is recorded as the
 “ punishment, for touching any one with ashes, mud, or dust; double that
 “ sum is demanded, for touching him with excrement, or *the heel*, or spittle;
 “ these fines to be doubled, if the fault be committed against those of equal
 “ as well as superior cast, or against the wife of another; if the [sufferers]
 “ be of inferior cast, let half the [specified] fine be levied; but if committed
 “ through inadvertence, drunkenness, or the like, it is not punishable.” *The*
heel, the hinder part of the foot. KATYAYUNU: “ The fine is declared to
 “ be fourfold, when the vomited contents of the stomach, or urine, or feces,
 “ or the like, are thrown on the lower extremities; six-fold if upon the trunk
 “ itself; but eight-fold, if upon the head.”

Offences
 enumerated,
 with the
 fines for
 them.

4. YANYUWULKYU: “ For holding up [threateningly] a hand or a foot,
 “ the punishment shall be [in order] ten, and twenty, *punus*: the middle
 “ scale of punishment is declared for all classes, for mutual raising of
 “ weapons.” THE SAME AUTHOR says: “ The punishment of ten *punus*
 “ shall be inflicted, for violent pulling of the foot, the hair, the clothes, or
 “ the hand, of another; an hundred, for painfully pulling a man about,
 “ tightly binding his clothes about him, and trampling him under foot.”
 “ The man who causes *pain* [to another], short of drawing blood, with a stick
 “ or the like, shall be fined thirty two *punus*; double that sum, if blood be
 “ produced.” The meaning of *pain*, and the rest is, that an hundred *punus*
 shall be levied for [a complicated assault, both] tying a man in his clothes,
 violently pulling him about, and trampling him under foot. THE SAME
 AUTHOR says: “ The middle amercement shall be imposed, for breaking a
 “ hand, a foot, or a tooth; for tearing the ears or the nose; for laying open
 “ a sore, and likewise for beating one till he seems dead: the limb with
 “ which any one gives pain to *Brahmans*, if not himself a *Brahmun*, shall
 “ be cut off. The lowest amercement, for raising [that limb, or a weapon]
 “ against them, but the half of it, for only touching [weapons] with hurtful

" intent." MUNOO ¹: " With whatever member a low-born man shall assault
 " or hurt a superior, even that member of his must be slit, [or cut more or
 " less in proportion to the injury]; this is an ordinance of MUNOO." " He CCXXI.
 " who raises his hand, or a staff, against another, shall have his hand
 " cut." KATYAYUNU: " Just as the fines are laid down for abusive lan-
 " guage between men in the regular or inverse order of the classes, even so
 " shall the fines for violent affray be imposed, according to their order [in
 " rank]."

5. VISHNOO: " The fine for every one of many persons beating one,
 " shall, for each, be double of that declared [for a single offender]."

Double fine
for many
assaulting
one.

6. KATYAYUNU: In case of injury to the body, or organs, of another,
 " at whatever amount they determine the fine, the very same sum shall
 " be given, *to cause pleasure*, and *for the cure*, [as fixed] by *learned men*."
To cause pleasure, to make satisfaction to the sufferer. *The cure*, the price
 of medicines, and the like. By *learned men*, is meant: ' That must be paid,
 which is settled by those skilled in the matter.'

Damages
awarded in
proportion
to the inju-
ry.

7. With reference to beating animals, and the like, YANYUWULKYU says:
 " The fine for giving pain to, or drawing blood from, as well as cutting
 " off the branches [as horns &c.] of inferior animals, shall be from two
 " *punus*, ascending in order: [of the injury]." " For cutting off their or-
 " gans of generation, and for causing their death, the second amercement
 " shall be paid, and their value also; a double punishment shall be im-
 " posed in the case of superior animals, when illtreated as above de-
 " scribed."

Cruelty to
animals pe-
nishable.

8. In respect of damage to trees, says MUNOO: ² " According to the
 " use and value of all great trees, must a fine be set for injuring them;
 " this is an established rule."

As well as
damage to
trees.

1—Chap. 8th, vs. 279-84.

2—Chap. 8th, v. 285.

CHAPTER XVII.

ROBBERY, —[STEYUM]

Robbery
defined; of
three de-
grees.

CCXXII.

1. NARUDU specifies three degrees, of things liable to be stolen: " All earthen-ware utensils; a stool, a bedstead; [all articles made of] bone, [or ivory], wood, or leather; as well as grass, and the like; leguminous grains, and grain ready dressed; are termed inferior articles." " Cloth made from any material except silk, and likewise all cattle, with the exception of kine; all metals except gold, and rice of all sorts; barley and such like [grain], are termed articles of middling estimation." " Gold, precious stones, silken clothes, women, men, kine, elephants, horses, and the property of the gods, the *Brahmun*, and the king, are the first rate articles."

Notorious
rogues enu-
merated.

2. THE SAME AUTHOR here first exhibits [the nature] of an open thief: " *Traders*, [naigumu]; ¹ *physicians*; *gamesters*; *assessors*; persons taking *bribes*, [and] *cheats*; *fortune tellers* [and] professional *prostitutes*; ² persons skilled in the arts; *counterfeits*, and those who perform unlawful acts; *arbitrators*, [*Mudhyusthu*], ³ *false witnesses*, and likewise those who gain a living by fraudulent practices, are all of them open thieves." In another SMRITI also we find: " Wherever manifest cheats, persons having recourse to false weights and measures; those taking bribes, or employing fraud; impostors; bad women; as well as counterfeits, and those who live by shewing fortunes, are found, all these, and the like, may be known for manifest thieves."

1—See Chap. 12th, para. 3d. The word is here translated in conformity to the succeeding text of BRUHUSPUTI, evidently intended by our author to furnish the gloss on it.

2—The word 'Kshoodrak' for which the VEERMITRODUYU reads *Bhudrak*, is translated thus, as in the masculine plural it is unmeaning; in the subsequent text of BRUHUSPUTI, as read in the VEERMITRODUYU, it bears the same sense, supported by the succeeding text, 'bad women.'

3—See Chap. 1st, Sec. 1st.

3. BRUHUSPUTI: That *trader*, who shall sell an article, concealing its blemish, mixing it up and making it over again, shall be made to give [an article of] twice its value, and likewise pay a fine equal to the same." "That *physician* who, being ignorant of medicine or its invocations,¹ or unacquainted with the nature of disease, yet levies money from those who are sick, deserves to be punished even as a thief. CCXXIII. "Those who *play* with false dice; professional *prostitutes*; those who seize the king's dues; *astrologers*, as well as *cheats*, are deserving of punishment as being all denominated swindlers." "Assessors pronouncing an unjust decision; even so also, those who live by *bribery*; and those who *cheat* persons trusting them, are every one of them to be banished." "Those who, not understanding their subject, shall pretend to a knowledge of *astrology*, or shall foretell prodigies, and likewise expound auspicious omens or the like to mankind, must be strictly kept down." "Those men, who exhibit themselves [as religious mendicants] with a staff, deer's skin, and other requisite accompaniments,² and, by these means *deceiving* men, kill them, shall be put to death by the king's people." "Those who, making up a thing of very small value, raise a great price upon it, and they who impose upon other people, deserve to be punished in proportion to the amount." "They who make false gold, precious stones, coral, or the like, shall be made to give back their price to the person who has bought them, and to pay double the amount as a fine to the king." "Persons, acting as *arbitrators* [*Mudhyusthu*], who become corrupt through favor, gain, or other [motive], and those *witnesses* who depose contrary to the truth, shall be made to pay double [the sum depending] as a fine."

The above terms explained by other texts.

1—Perhaps "consultation, advice," would be a better term. The higher classes, when taking medicine, use very appropriate *muntras*, or formulas, evincing their reliance on the Deity and their medical advisers' skill.
2—Or, as some copies read, "adorned with jewels and fine clothes."

Secret
thieves.

4. VYASU: "When persons are found walking about at night time in
" a secret manner, furnished with implements [of theft] or the like, and
" whose place of abode is not known, they shall be recognized as secret
" thieves." The SAME AUTHOR adds: "Pick-pockets [or shop-lifters];¹
" burglars or housebreakers breaking a hole; highwaymen [*Panthumooshu*]
" who rob travellers; those who open bundles [*Grunthi mockuku*], and
" stealers of women, men, line, horses, and other cattle, are all reckoned
CCXXIV. " but nine different kinds of thieves." A hole, [*Sundhi*] in a wall, or the like.

Punish-
ments en-
acted for
them.

5. YANYUWULKYU: "Let shop-lifters, and those who open bundles,
" be both made to lose *the tongs* of their hand; for the second offence, they
" shall be deprived of a hand or foot." *The tongs*, the forefinger and
thumb. "The robbers, who having broken a hole², commit a robbery at
" night, them shall the king, having cut off both hands, cause to be impaled
" with a very sharp stake." BRUHUSPUTI: "In like manner, let him
" cause highwaymen to be hanged, tied by the neck to a tree. He shall
" cause the *fingers* of package-openers to be cut off, for apprehension on
" the first offence; on a second [apprehension], both hands or feet; for
" the third, they are deserving of *Wudhu*." *Fingers*, the forefinger and
thumb.

Responsi-
bility of the
country, in
certain ca-
ses.

6. NARUDU specifies certain distinctions in the flight of thieves, taking
the stolen property with them: "A thief shall by every effort be seized
" by him in whose district [or premises] he may be furtively concealed.
" Else, if the trace or footmark³ be not carried out [of the premises], he
" shall be made to pay the amount of the loss. If the trace be carried
" forward from that [district], yet have not fallen elsewhere, then they shall

1--*Ootkshepuku*. The MITAKSHURA defines it to be, "those who pilfer by throwing up clothes and the like,"
hooks for instance. The VERMITRODUYU in commenting on the text above, says, "those who, having
" satisfied themselves of the ignorance of the owner, get the property out of his possession, by snatching
" it from him."

2--*Sundhi*, a hole made in a wall for felonious entry. *Sundhi chour*, a
burglar, a house breaker.

3--*Pudum*; the same which is called "*pagla*" in Goojurat to
this day; the custom is in the Dukhun equally well known, under the name of *Magu*. Reports 2d, 354.

" cause the neighbourhood¹, the road-keepers, or even those entrusted
 " with the care of the district, to pay the loss." YANYUWOLKYU also:
 " The village shall pay, when within its own limits, or wherever the trace
 " goes; the five-village community, if beyond one *kroshu*; or again, that of
 " ten villages."

7. On the subject of kidnapping women, VYASU says: " The woman-
 " stealer shall be burned² on an iron bedstead, with a fire of grass; the
 " manstealer shall be set up where four roads meet, after having his hands
 " and feet cut off." BRUHUSPUTI: " Having cut off the nose of a stealer of
 " kine, and bound him, let them plunge him into the water." ³ NARUDU:
 " *Wudhu* shall be inflicted on him, who robs another of his all, or who car-
 " ries off a married woman, or a virgin." " BRUHUSPUTI directs that they
 " confiscate *all* [the wealth] of those who carry off a horse, an elephant,
 " or metals." *All*; the wealth, must be here supplied. VYASU: " Let them
 " cut off, with a very sharp instrument, half the foot of him who carries
 " off [common] animals." NARUDU: " For stealing animals of a superior
 " kind, let his punishment be that of the highest scale, the middle scale for
 " the middle class of animals, and the first [or lowest] scale for such an
 " act in respect of mean animals."

Punish-
ment for
kidnapping,
and for
stealing
cattle, &c.

CCXXV.

8. MUNOO: ⁴ " Corporal punishment [*wudhu*] shall be inflicted on him,
 " who steals more than ten *Koomblus* ⁵ of grain; for less he must be fined

And for
robbery of
valuables
and grain.

1—*Samunla*; the same word occurred in the same sense, at Chapter 18th, para. 2d.

2—The VEERMITRODUYU reads, " in the ordeal of hot iron, with the fire in his hand."

3—So the VEERMITRODUYU, according to which this text was inserted in the Errata.

4—Chap. 8th, v. 329. KOOLLOOYU, whose commentary Sir W. Jones follows, divides *Wudhu* into three degrees; *Marunu*, Capital; *Chhednu*, membral, involving loss of limb; and *Turunu*, Corporal. As our law admits not infliction of the second, [though a commutation of it into imprisonment is awarded, where the punishment itself is enjoined by the Hindoo Law], *Wudhu* must be taken to mean, either Capital, or Corporal punishment, as the case may be. It is used in the latter sense in verse 320, in the former in verse 323. Indeed it is more than hinted, in the commentary on verse 320, that either of the three kinds is to be applied, according to the circumstances of the robbery; for instance, the first, if a *Brahmun* be the person robbed, &c.

5—See As. Res. 5th, 96-7—Wilson, ad verb.

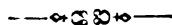
“ eleven times as much, and shall pay to the owner the amount of
 “ his property.” One *Koombhu* is twenty *Prusthus*. HE AGAIN says ¹ :
 “ For stealing the most precious gems [as diamonds or rubies], the
 “ thief deserves capital punishment [*wudhu*].” NARUDU: “ Capital
 “ punishment [*Wudhu*] shall be inflicted for stealing more than a hundred
 “ of [any of the following things], gold and silver pieces, or the like;
 “ fine clothes, and likewise all precious stones.” MUNOO ²: “ For
 “ stealing gold or silver, or the like, or costly apparel: or more than fifty
 “ *pulus*, it is enacted that a hand shall be amputated; for less, the king
 “ shall set a fine eleven times as much as the value.”

Certain li-
 mitations to
 capital pun-
 ishment.

9. YANYUWULKYU: “ Having set a mark on a *Brahmun* found guilty
 “ of such offence, let him be banished from that his native country.”
 MUNOO ³: “ [Criminals of] all the classes, having performed an expiation
 “ as ordained by law, shall not be marked on the forehead, but be con-
 “ demned to pay the highest fine.” YANYUWULKYU also: “ Having
 “ caused restitution of the stolen property, they shall cause the thieves
 “ to be put to death, by different modes of *Wudhu*.”

Aiders and
 abettors.

10. NARUDU: “ They who grant food and an *asylum* [opportunity],
 “ to thieves flying before pursuit, and they who wink at their escape, though
 “ able to stop them, are also their accomplices in the offence.” And
 therefore, sharers in their punishment.



CHAPTER XVIII.

HEINOUS OFFENCES, —[*SAHUSUM*].

Violent
 acts

1. Their nature is declared by NARUDU: “ Whatever act is by strength
 “ performed, by one inflamed with power, [*bulu*] is denominated [*Sahusu*]

CCXXVII.

1—Chapter 8th, 323.

2—Chapter 8th, 321-2.

3—Chapter 8th, v. 240.

" violence, oppression; for strength [*Suhus*, whence *Sahusu*] is also termed
" power [*bulu*]."

2. BRUHUSPOTI: " Killing a human being, robbery, handling the per-
" son of another man's wife, and *both species* of assault, are the four defined and
" kinds of violence." *Both species*, that is, abuse and affray.¹ NARU- enumerated.
DU: " Spoiling fruits, roots, water, and such things, and agricultural
" implements, or throwing them away, treading them under foot, or the
" like, is declared to be the first degree of violence [*pruthumu sahusu*]."
" [Misusing] in the very same way, clothes, animals, food, drink, and
" household utensils, is denounced as the middle degree of violence [*mudh-*
" *yumu sahusu*]. " Malicious practice with poison, weapons, or the
" like; the handling of another man's wife, and all other encompassing
" of life, is called the highest degree of violence [*oottumu sahusu*]."

3. YANYUWULKYU: " The king shall apprehend sacrilegious house-
" breakers [*Bundigrahu*]; likewise those who steal horses, and elephants, Capital pu-
" as well as violent murderers, and cause them to be empaled on a nishment
" stake." BRUHUSPOTI: " Having carefully ascertained who are notori- for certain
" ous murderers, and likewise murderers in secret, and having seized all offenders.
" their effects, they are to be killed by different modes of death."

4. THE SAME AUTHOR says: " When many persons, filled with rage, Punish-
" beat [to death] one single person, then he who strikes him on a vital part, ment in
" is declared to be the murderer." ² case of
mob.

5. KATYAYANU: " He who commences the quarrel, or takes a part in Aiders and
" it, as well as he who points out the road; he who gives an asylum, and abettors.
" he who furnishes weapons, or gives food, to evil doers; so even, he who CCXXXVIII.
" advised for battle, he who instigated his destruction; one concerned in

1—Chapter 16th, Sections 1st and 2d.

2—In most of the copies, this text ran in a plural sense, but in some it was singular, and the Pundits were determined on the adoption of that number, by fading it so in the VEERNITRODUYU.

“ the work of deceit; he who speaks harm [of the deceased]; who rejoices
 “ [with the murderers]; or prevents not the injury, though possessing the
 “ power, are all of them actors in the deed: They shall cause a suitable
 “ punishment to be awarded, proportioned to the power [of each to suffer].”

Exceptions
in favor of
Brahmins,
in respect
to capital
punish-
ment.

6. NARUDU lays down distinctions in the punishment of *Brahmunus*:
 “ From there being no difference [in the degrees of guilt], the same
 “ measure of punishment is laid down for all. That of *Brahmunus* must
 “ be short of *Wudhu*; a *Brahmun* is not liable to undergo *Wudhu*: his
 “ punishment shall be, shaving of the head, banishment from the city, a
 “ plain mark upon his forehead, and parading upon an ass. *Wudhu* must
 “ not be inflicted on a *Brahmun*, even if guilty of felony [*Atutayi*].” For,
 according to SOOMUNTOO: ¹ “ There is no blame for putting to death
 “ persons acting feloniously, excepting kine, and *Brahmins*.” KATYAYANU:
 “ BHARGOO says, if among felons, there be one of the highest class, and
 “ engaged in austerities and reading the *Vedas*, then, in that case alone,
 “ *Wudhu* shall not be inflicted. *Wudhu* is for sinners who are of low
 “ class.”

Felons enu-
merated.

7. THE SAME AUTHOR declares who are felons [*Atutayi*]: ² “ He who
 “ uses a sword, poison, or fire, as well as he who raises his hand in impre-
 “ cation, and he who kills by magic: and also a spy against the king; he
 “ who enjoys a married woman contrary to rule; ³ who is diligent in picking
 “ out holes [in another man's coat]: all these persons, and the like of them,
 “ are to be known as felons.” And VASISHTHU likewise says: ⁴ “ An
 “ incendiary, and a poisoner, one who offensively handles weapons, who
 “ robs the wealth of another, as well as he who steals his land, or his wife,
 “ are all six of them felons.”

¹—²—Macnaghten 423.

³—Explained to mean “ Rape,” in a subsequent text, para. 14th.

⁴—Macnaghten 423.

8. However, the text of MUNOO¹: "Let a man without hesitation slay another, [if he cannot otherwise escape], who assails him with intent to murder [*Atutayi*], whether young or old, or his preceptor, or a *Brahmun* deeply versed in the scripture:" and this of KATYAYUNU: "To him who shall kill a felon coming with intent to take his life, even though he [the felon] have gone through the *Vedus* [*Vedantu*], the sin of the death of a *Brahmun* does not attach:" [require consideration]. The words *whether* [*va*], and *even* [*upi*], relate to the death of all felons with the exception of *Brahmun*s; because the introduction of the word *Brahmun* is for the sake of giving greater force to the law [by an extreme example, *Kaimootikunyanu*]. So, in the MITAKSHURA it is said: "A *Brahmun* felon is liable to *Wudhu*; how then [*kimoota*] shall any other man [escape]." And we find the same, both from this text of GALUVU: "He who kills one, the highest *Brahmun*, feloniously attacking him with a raised weapon, does not render himself a *Brahmun*'s murderer; did he not kill him, he would really be guilty of *Brahmun*'s murder"²; and this of BRUHSPUTI: "He who kills a felon, versed in the *Vedus* and come of a good family, does not commit heinous murder; did he not kill him, he would be guilty."

Examination of the 'inviolability of *Brahmun*s,

CCXXIX,

9. The following interpretation is given in the SMRITI CHUNDRIKA: "That the *Brahmun* who comes with a felonious intention of putting another to death, alone deserves *Wudhu*; not the *Brahmun* who seizes the land or wife, or other [property] of another. But *Kshutriyus*, or other persons guilty of the abovementioned crimes, are deserving of *Wudhu*"³. And this is the right [interpretation], because of the necessity for opposing the vague

Doctrine of the SMRITI CHUNDRIKA stated, and approved,

¹—Chapter 6th, 350, See General note, "SMRITI," at the end,

²—The expression *Brahmun* *ka*, [lit 'who procures abortion'] is explained in the *VANAVASANA*, "as having reference to a very superior *Brah-*

"*munu*," [*Oottumu Brahmunu vishechu*]

³—See note to Chap. 16th, Sec 1st, para 3d,

[or general] sense of the aforementioned rules, of SOOMUNTOO and KAT-YAYUNU, by the more explicit expression of 'one feloniously attempting the life of another,' suggested by these last quoted texts, of MUNOO, KAT-YAYUNU, GALUVU, and BRUHUSPUTI.

Subject
continued,

10. However, what BRUHUSPUTI says: "He who shall refrain from killing a man of superior class, a performer of austere acts of devotion and reader of the *Vedas*, though liable to *Wudhu* for felonious acts, shall obtain the benefit of one *Ushwamedhu*," has reference only to a felon distinct from one seeking the man's own life.

11. AND AGAIN, the killing of a *Brahmun* feloniously seeking the life of another, is forbidden in this age of the world [by the text]: "There must be no killing, even in a just quarrel¹, of a chief *Brahmun*, though seeking one's life," which prohibition would be evaded, if *Wudhu* were inflicted according to law; and though all the things now forbidden in the *Kuli*, or present, age, had previously received the sanction of [our ancient] enactments, yet: "The learned have declared these *laws* abrogated in the *Kuli* age." And in all the commentaries there is a clear line drawn, from the acceptance of the word *laws*. Therefore, in the present age of the world, a *Brahmun* feloniously seeking the life of another is not liable to *Wudhu*. But for other [offences] a *Brahmun* felon, is not in any *Yoggu* liable to *Wudhu*; whilst all other felonious criminals, whether *Kshutriyu* or other class, are in all ages of the world liable to *Wudhu*².

Estimation
of articles
subject to
robbery,

12. BRUHUSPUTI declares the punishment for stealing articles of low, middling, and great value: "So, even he who shall destroy or carry off implements of husbandry, or flowers, roots, or fruits, is deserving

1—*Dharmu yacddhe*; this seems to be the same term which Sir W. Jones has translated "religious war," in his general note at the end of MUNOO, SMRITI 2d; the text appears the same.

2—*Nirruyu Sindho* Section 3d,

“ of punishment, above a hundred *punus*, according to his offence. In
 “ like manner, he who shall destroy or steal [inferior] animals, clothes,
 “ grain, liquids, as well as household utensils, shall be punished by a
 “ fine, not less than two hundred *punus*. If women, men, kine, gold,
 “ precious stones, as well as the property of the gods, or of *Brahmans*,
 “ and that of *females*; [and similar] costly articles, his fine shall be
 “ equal to the value of the stolen property. Or, double its amount [even] CCXXXI
 “ may be thought equitable by the king, according to the person; or,
 “ *the thief* may be [even] put to death, with a view to the prevention
 “ of [bad example from] his society.” *Female*, a woman’s property.
 The word, *Or*, has the meaning of ‘even’. This text belongs to the
 Chapter on Heinous Offences, according to Mudunu, [and not to that
 on Robbery] from the literal meaning of the words ‘*shall destroy*’ and
 ‘*thief*,’ which come together in this place.

13. YANYUWULEYU shews the punishment for the original instigator of
 heinous offences: “ He who causes the commission of violence, shall be
 “ made to pay a *double* fine; he also who, by saying, ‘I will give [such
 “ a reward]’, causes its perpetration, shall be made to pay *quadruple* its
 “ amount.” That is, *double* or *quadruple*, in proportion to the fine imposed
 on the actual perpetrator of it.

Instigators,
and their
punish-
ment.

14. The punishment for him who by force enjoys a virtuous *Brahmuni*, Rape.
 is thus declared by Munoo: ‘ “ A *Brahmun* who carnally knows a guarded
 “ woman without her free will, must be fined a thousand [*punus*].” If the
 crime be committed against such a woman, by a man of the *Kshutriya*, or
 other class, says BRAHUSPUTI: “ If any one by force *enjoy* [a woman],
 “ then let the king seize the whole of his property, and having cut off his
 “ penis and scrotum, afterwards cause him to be carried round [the town]
 “ upon an ass.” *Enjoy*, have connexion, with the lawful wife of another

man. The following punishment for forcible enjoyment of a married woman, whether of lower or higher cast, [than himself] or of equal class, by a man of the *Kshatriya* or other tribe, is denounced by KATYAYANU:

“ When a man has obtained enjoyment of a woman, by seizure of her person, infliction of *Wudhu* is in that case established, because the act is a transgressing [of the admitted order] of enjoyment.”

Restraints
on a ravish-
ed woman.

CCXXXII.]

15. THE SAME AUTHOR says: “ Let the woman who has thus unwillingly been enjoyed, be kept shut up in the house, having her person slovenly, sleeping on the ground, and furnished only with a single ball of food [or with what nature requires].” HE ADDS: “ She who has been enjoyed by a man of low cast is to be put away, or suffer *Wudhu*.” Here *Wudhu* must be understood, only in case of her consenting to the guilty act.

Punish-
ment of the
three dis-
tinctions of
heinous of-
fences.

16. NARUDU thus declares the punishment of the lowest, middling, and highest crimes [*Sahusu*]: “ The punishment of it must be in proportion to the crime, but, in the first [or lowest] degree, not less than one hundred [*punus*]. By those well versed in the law, that of the middle class of crimes, is shewn to be not less than five hundred *punus*. The fine for the highest scale of crime must be nothing short of one thousand [*punus*]. *Wudhu*, confiscation of every thing [the criminal is worth], banishment from the city, with branding, and amputation of his limbs, these are the punishments declared for *Oottumu sahusu*, or the highest degree of crime.”

To be in-
flicted by
the prince
alone.

17. The command for inflicting *Wudhu*, amputation, and the other punishments named, however, is the province of the prince, and of no other, since to him alone pertains the right to inflict punishment.

CHAPTER XIX.

COMMERCE WITH WOMEN,—[STREESUNGRUHUNUM].

1. The punishment for *forcible* enjoyment of another man's wife, as an act of a heinous nature, has been before declared.¹ BRUHSPATI declares [that for] the *fraudulent* enjoyment of a woman of similar cast, being the wife of another man: "If a man by fraud enjoy a woman, he shall be punished by *full confiscation*, and, having been branded with the mark of the pudendum muliebre, let him be afterwards banished from the city." *Full confiscation*, that is, confiscation of his all. And this punishment is meant in regard to women of equal class. If she be of lower, the half of it is proper; but in the case of a woman of superior cast, *Wudhu* is enjoined; and accordingly THE SAME AUTHOR says: "The half of that punishment, which is to be inflicted for connexion with a woman of equal class, is the due of him who enjoys a woman of lower class. But for connexion with a woman of more exalted cast, let the man be put to death."

Commerce with women.

CCXXXIII

Punishment of fraud in such cases.

2. The several punishments of adultery, with women of the three comparative degrees, lower, equal, and higher [than the adulterer], are laid down by THE SAME AUTHOR: "The punishment for adultery in each of these three orders, must be applied to each in its degree, the lowest punishment [for the lowest rank], the middling, [for the middling], and the highest [for the highest]; for forcible enjoyment in secret, let the middling degree be inflicted."

Punishment of adultery, considered with regard to class.

3. The punishment for a man of bad life, who converses with the wife of another man, is laid down by MUNOO:² "A man, before noted for such an offence, who converses in secret with the wife of another, shall pay

Criminal conversation.

¹—Chapter 18th, para. 14.² Chapter 8th, 354.

“ the first of the three usual amercements.” The punishment for mutual conversation between a man and woman, who have been both forbidden by the father or other relative, is declared by YANYUWULKYU: “ Let a woman, “ forbidden so to act, be fined one hundred *punus*, but let the punishment “ for the man be double that sum; but where the prohibition has been “ given to both, then let their punishment be the same as is inflicted for “ adultery.” The first half of this couplet has reference to prohibition CCXXXIV. communicated to one of the parties only; and the last half, to a communication of it to both.

and adultery in general.

4. YANYUWULKYU declares the punishment for adultery brought about through the mutual desire of both: “ [For adultery] between persons of “ equal cast, let the highest fine be imposed: But the middling scale for “ the same crime with a woman of lower cast; when the woman’s cast “ is higher, let the man suffer *Wudhu*, and the woman have her ears or “ other [limbs] cut off.”

Punishment of women in all cases, is half of that laid down for males.

5. KATYAYUNU: “ And in all offences, whatever sum of money is laid “ down as the punishment of it in a man, the half of it must a woman pay “ who is guilty of the same; where *Wudhu* is denounced against a man, “ let a woman’s person be mutilated.”

Fornication, considered with reference to class.

6. But for connexion with a *Brahmuni* of loose life, thus says MUNOO: ¹ “ But only five hundred [*punus*], if he knew her with her free consent.” This relates to a woman of equal cast. On the subject of connexion with women of lower cast, and loose morals, the SAME AUTHOR says: ² “ A “ *Brahmunu* shall pay five hundred *punus*, if he connect himself criminally “ with an unguarded woman of the *Vaishyu*, *Rajunyu* [or *Kshutriyu*], or “ *Shoodru* class; and a thousand, [for such a connexion with] a woman of

¹—Chapter 6th, 378, of which the first couplet, as relating to guarded women, was quoted. Chap. 15th, para. 14 and is repeated here below.

²—Chapter 9th, 385.

" the lowest cast [*Untyju*]." However this text: ¹ " A *Brahman* who carnally knows a guarded woman without her free will, must be fined a thousand *panus*," especially intends a virtuous woman. The punishment of a *Shoodru* for connexion with a woman of higher cast, is declared by *Muxoo*: ² " A *Shoodru* having an adulterous connexion with a woman of a twice born class, whether guarded at home or unguarded, [shall thus be punished]; if she was unguarded, he shall lose the part [offending], and his whole substance; if guarded, [and a *Brahmuni*], every thing, even his life." If a *Shoodru* have criminal connexion with an unguarded *Brahmuni*, his parts must be cut off, and all his property be confiscated; but, if she be guarded, *Wudhu* is further incurred. It means, that for adultery with a guarded woman, his whole property shall be confiscated, and he be considered deserving of *Wudhu*.

CCXXXV.

7. *Goutumu*: " For adultery with the wife of his preceptor, let a man's parts be taken away, and all his property be seized; if the woman be guarded, let him further suffer *Wudhu*." *Munoo*: " But, if a *Vaishyu* or *Parthivu* [man of the royal class, *Kshutriyu*] commit adultery with a *Brahmuni* whom her husband guards not at home, the king shall only fine the *Vaishyu* five hundred, and the *Kshutriyu* a thousand." THE SAME AUTHOR says: ³ " Both of them, however, if they commit that offence with a *Brahmuni* not only guarded [but eminent for good qualities], shall be punished like *Shoodrus*, or be burned in a fire of dry grass or reeds." AND AGAIN: ⁴ " If a *Vaishyu* converse criminally with a guarded woman of the *Kshutriyu*, or a *Kshutriyu* with one of the *Vaishyu* class, they both deserve the same punishment as in the case of an unguarded *Brahmuni*." Namely, the same fine which is denounced against connexion with an unguarded *Brahmuni*. *Vusishtu*: " If a man of the

1—Chapter 8th, 376.

2—Chapter 8th, 374.

3—Chapter 8th, 377.

4—Chapter 8th, 382.

" royal class [*Rajanyu*] have criminal connexion with a *Brahmuni* woman,
 " let him be enclosed with bundles of reeds, and be consumed with fire:
 " Even thus do to a *Vaishya*, if he have connexion with a woman of the
 " royal class, and likewise to a *Shoodru*, if he commit the crime with a
 " woman of the royal, or of the *Vaishya*, class."

Incest, defined.

8. NARUDU: " He who has criminal connexion with any one of the
 " following women, a mother's sister, a mother in law; a maternal uncle's
 " wife; a father's sister; the respective wives, of a paternal uncle, a
 " friend, and a pupil; a sister, her friend; a daughter in law, a daughter,
 " and the wife of one's preceptor; every woman descended from the same
 " family, any woman dependant on his protection, the king's wife, a female
 " devotee, a nurse, a woman who preserves her conjugal duty inviolate;
 " and any woman of the supreme class, is said to be as guilty as the
 " violator of his religious preceptor's bed. No punishment short of cutting
 " off his parts, is laid down for such a crime as this." YANYUWULKYU
 CCXXXVI. also: " A man who has connexion with his father's sister, or his mother's
 " sister; with his maternal uncle's wife, and also with his daughter-
 " in law, with his step-mother, his sister; either with his preceptor's
 " daughter or his preceptor's wife, or with his own daughter, is as the
 " violator of his preceptor's bed: having cut off his privy parts, let *Wudhu*
 " be his portion; and the same for the woman, if she were consenting to
 " the act."

Exception
in regard to
punishment
of Brah-
munas.

9. This punishment however is not to be inflicted on *Brahmunas*: For,
 among the texts of BRAHUSPUTI, on the liability of *Brahmunas*, we find:
 " Let the king impose such a mark as will render his punishment memo-
 " rable, upon a man when caught in the act of improperly handling another
 " man's wife, and then banish him." If one, not a *Brahmun*, have criminal
 " intercourse with such women, he is deserving of *Wudhu*, even in the
 " capital degree [*Pranantu*]."

10. SHUNKHU and LIKMITU say: " With whatever member any particular offence is committed, let that very member be cut off, whoever the offender be, unless a *Brahmunu*." YANYUWULKYU declares the punishment of a *Brahmun* having connexion with a slave or the like: " The man who has carnal intercourse with slaves *kept close*, as well as those entertained as mistresses, shall be made to pay, even though their connexion be [in other cases] permitted, a fine amounting to fifty *punus*." *Kept close*, that is, those forbidden by their master to have commerce with other men.

11. NARUDU: " Any woman, *not a Brahmini*, who is *self willed*, [*Svairini*], or a downright prostitute, or a slave, and one *without a home*, may have connexion with a man of higher cast than herself, but not with one of inferior. But, if such a woman be kept as a mistress, [the person intriguing with her] is blameworthy, equally as if she were another man's wife." *Not a Brahmini*, whose nature is denoted by the adjective *self willed*, which means, ' one, her own mistress, who goes with other men.' *Without a home*, a woman who has left her family, and goes with other men. YANYUWULKYU: " If a man have connexion with [a woman of] the lowest casts [*untyu*], let him be branded with the mark of some disgraceful thing ¹, and banished the country. If a *Shoodru* [act in such manner], he shall be similarly marked ²; but, if a man of vile cast have connexion with a woman of high class, *Wudhu* [shall be his portion]."

Fornication, in what cases permitted and when punishable.

CCXXXVII.

12. The punishment for connexion wilfully effected by a woman, is thus declared by NARUDU: " That female who, going to a man's house, excites his desire by handling him, or the like, and so causes him to lie with

Seduction of a man by a woman punishable.

1—*Koobundhu*; or, " of a headless trunk," if *Kubundu* be the correct reading.

2—The Mit. reads, " *Untyusyat*," shall become even of that lowest cast."

and it has here been altered, perhaps, without cause, as some of the manuscripts had the same.

“ her, should be punished, as declared by sages, in half that prescribed
 “ for a man [guilty of like conduct.” para. 4]. Yumu defines the pu-
 nishment for women of the *Brahmun* and the other classes, who have cri-
 minal connexion with a *Shoodru*, or other [man of lower class]: “ If a
 “ *Brahmuni* woman, overpowered by desire, submit herself to the em-
 “ braces of a *Vrishulu*, let the king cause her to be devoured with dogs,
 “ at the place of the *slaughterers*. But if a *Brahmuni* woman submit her-
 “ self to the embraces, either of a *Vaishyu*, or of a *Kshutriyu*, her head shall
 “ be shaved, and she shall be carried round upon an ass.” *Vrishulu*,
 a *Shoodru*. *Slaughterers*, venders of flesh or fowl; expressing [that she is
 to be cast out to the dogs] at the slaughter houses. And this punishment
 is for continued [or excessive] attachment to such person, according to
 the *CHUNDRIKA*.

Proof of
adultery
defined.

13. YANYUWULKYU points out the means of ascertaining the act of
 adultery: ¹ “ In cases of criminal conversation, the man may be seized, if
 “ engaged in playing with the hair of a woman, the wife of another, or at
 “ the moment of discovering love marks [as bites or scratches], and likewise
 “ upon the confession of *both*.” From the expression, of *both*, it cannot,
 on the confession of only one of the parties, be pronounced that criminal
 intercourse has taken place.

Punish-
ment of
slander;
and of un-
natural
crimes.

14. YANYUWULKYU propounds slander: “ He who asserts blemishes
 “ against an [unmarried] woman, shall pay an hundred [*punus*]. But for
 “ a false accusation, two hundred; for connexion with a beast, he shall pay
 “ an hundred, and even the middle scale of punishment, for connexion with
 “ a *distressed* woman, or a cow.” Moreover: “ If a man enjoy a woman
 “ in an improper part ², or a male, and if he perform natural evacuations
 “ before [a woman], he shall be fined the sum of twenty-four *punus*; and

1—Strange's Elem. 1st, 45. 2d, 86-7.

2—*Uyonou*, non in vulva; ut, in ore, aut alio [modo
 obscuro],” secund. comm. Mit.

“ likewise for connexion with a female devotee.” *Distressed*¹, any one in pain, even the man’s own wife. We must understand [also], that he who shall perform his evacuations or the like [dirty act] before the face of a woman [shall be punished].



CHAPTER XX.

DUTIES OF MAN AND WIFE,—[STREE POON DHURMU].

1. Now, the punishment for a husband who puts away a wife possessed of good qualities, is declared: “ The husband who puts away a wife that “ is obedient, not evil speaking, dexterous [at her duties], virtuous, and “ maintaining her conjugal vow, must be kept [in his duty to her] by a fine “ from the king.” YANYUWULKYU:² “ He who forsakes a wife, though “ obedient to his commands, diligent in household management, mother “ of an excellent son, and speaking kindly, shall be compelled to pay the “ third part [of his wealth]; or, if poor, to provide a maintenance for that “ wife.”

Duties of
the hus-
band:

CCXXXIX

2. THE SAME AUTHOR says, with respect to women: “ Let the bid- “ ding of their husbands be performed by wives; this is the chief duty of “ a woman. Even if he be accused of deadly sin, yet let her wait until “ he be purified from it.”

and of the
wife.



CHAPTER XXI.

GAMBLING,—[DYOOTU SUMAHVUYUM].

1. YANYUWULKYU: “ [Payinent of] that which has been won *publicly*, “ in an assembly of gamesters, in the presence of the master of a gaming house,

Gambling,
when per-
mitted.

CCXL

1—The Mit reads “ with a low cast woman;”

2—Digest 2d, 240. Reports 1st, 63.

“ and when the king's share has been paid, shall be enforced : but not
 “ otherwise.” *Publicly*, not in secret. *In an assembly of gamesters*, in a
 gaming house. *Master of a gaming house*, one made, by the king, superin-
 tendant of gambling. The interpretation should be thus : ‘ Whatever has
 been won [whilst playing] in conformity to these regulations, the prince
 must cause to be paid, but nothing else.’

Punish-
ment of
fraud.

2. THE SAME AUTHOR specifies the punishment for one guilty of fraud
 in gambling : “ The man convicted of [making or using] false dice, or of
 “ [safely undergoing] ordeal, by *deceit*, shall be banished, after branding,
 “ by the king.” *Deceit*, fraud. Munoo¹ declares the punishment for gam-
 bling without permission from the king : “ Let the king punish [corpo-
 “ rally at discretion], both the gamester, and the keeper of a gaming house,
 “ whether they play with inanimate, or animate things ; and *Shoodrus* who
 “ adopt *the marks of the twiceborn*.” *The marks of the twiceborn*, wearing
 their string, reading the *Vedus*, or the like.

Gambling,
of two
kinds.

3. YANYUWULKYU thus assimilates the laws of gambling [*Dyootum*]
 and matches [*sumahvuyu*] : “ These very rules for gambling [*dyootu*] must
 “ also be applied in *live gambling matches*.” *Live gambling*, [*Prani dyoote*]
 denoting the nature of the match [*Sumahvuye*].

— ❧ —

CHAPTER XXII.

SUNDRIES,—[*PRUKEERNUKUM*].

Sundries.
CCXLI.

1. YANYUWULKYU : “ He who either omits, or adds any thing, in writ-
 “ ing the king's edicts, or who allows him that has robbed another of his
 “ wife to escape, shall suffer the highest amercement : he who does injury

“ to a twice-born man, by feeding him with *things not fit to be tasted*, shall
 “ receive the punishment of the highest scale of crime; that of the middle
 “ scale for [a like injury to] a *Kshutriyu*; the lowest, if to a *Vaishyu*, and
 “ the half [of that again] to one born a *Shoodru*.” *Things not fit to be
 tasted*, are, intoxicating liquors, wine, excrement, or the like. THE SAME
 author adds: “ Let him who deals in adulterated gold as pure, and him
 “ who sells *unclean meat*, have their body made less [by a limb], and
 “ undergo the highest punishment.” *Unclean meat*, the flesh of cows, or
 the like. From the use of the particle *and*, we must understand loss of
 limb; according to the MITAKSHURA. Again: “ The master of any
 “ animal also, whether armed with teeth or horns, who, having the power,
 “ still fails to relieve any one in pain from it [when attacked]; shall suffer
 “ the punishment of the middle scale of crime; but double, if the sufferer
 “ likewise made a noise beforehand.” *Making a noise*, that is, crying out.
 MUNOO: ¹ “ For killing a man, a fine equal to that for theft shall be
 “ instantly set; half that amount for large brute animals, as for a bull or
 “ cow, an elephant, a camel or a horse. For killing very young cattle, the
 “ fine shall be two hundred [*punus*]; and fifty, for elegant quadrupeds, or
 “ beautiful birds [as antelopes, parrots, and the like]. For an ass, a goat
 “ or a sheep, the fine must be five silver *mashikus* ², and one *mashu* for CCXLII.
 “ killing a dog, or a boar.” This fine must be understood, to be over and
 above payment of the value of the animal killed.

YANYUWULKYU: “ He who charges any roaming gallant as a thief,
 “ shall be made to pay fifty *punus* as a punishment; if he *sordidly take*
 “ money from him, and let him go, then eight times its amount is ordained
 “ as the fine.” *Sordidly take*, receive. “ Let the king banish, after cutting
 “ out his tongue, that man who utters *evil wishes* against the king, as well

1—Chapter 8th, vs. 296-97-98

H h h

2—As, Res, 5th, 91.

“ as him who openly *abuses* him, and him who divulges his secret counsels.” *Evil wishes*, for his death or the like. *Abuses*, by saying, ‘ May thy reign not last,’ or the like. MUNOO¹: “ Men who rob the king’s treasure, or “ obstinately oppose his commands, let him destroy by various modes of “ just punishment; and those who encourage his enemies.” YANYUWULKYU: “ The punishment of him who sells what has touched a dead body, and “ likewise of him who strikes his preceptor, and of him who seats himself “ in the king’s carriage, or throne, is that of the highest scale of crime.” *What has touched a dead body*, funeral clothes, or the like. THE SAME AUTHOR says: “ The punishment of him who puts out both the eyes of another, “ as well as of him who performs acts hostile to the king, and of him “ who, being a *Shoodru*, gains a livelihood by the office of a *Brahmun*, shall “ be eight hundred *punus*.” The meaning is, ‘ him who puts out both the eyes of another, him who does an act prohibited by the king, and that *Shoodru* who lives by the profession of a *Brahmun*’ But, according to the MITAKSHURA, ‘ If he assume the *Brahminical* string for the purpose of partaking of food at a *shraddhu*, he shall have a line, resembling the real string, imprinted on his body with a red hot rod.’

CCXLIII.

Standard
for valuation
of
fines,

THE SAME AUTHOR propounds the punishment for those who make [decrees] contrary to justice: “ An unjust decision must be revised by the “ king, and he must, as a punishment, impose a fine double [the loser’s “ fee² on] the amount litigated, upon the assessors, together with him “ who gained [in the first instance].” “ If a man, though he have justly “ lost his cause, yet cherish in his mind this idea, ‘ I am not conquered’, “ and again come into Court, let him again lose his cause, and be made to “ pay a double fine.”

In every part of this work, where the amount of fine is left unstated,

1—Chapter 9th, 275.

2—Chapter 5th, Section 4 para. 5.

it must be considered as meaning the number of *punus*. This *punu*, again, is the copper one, equal in weight to the *Kurshu* [of 16 *Mashus*], whence the copper *punu* is denominated *karshiku* [of the *Kurshu* standard], in Dictionaries. One *Kurshu* is the fourth part of a *pulu*. And when there are twice ten *kowrees*, their amount, or joint weight, is called one *Kakinee*, four of which make one *punu*. This is the table of the *punu* standard, according to *Bhaskuru Acharyu*.¹

But with respect to the [punishment enjoined for the] highest scale of crime, and the rest, we find: "When the fine amounts to a thousand *punus* with eighty more, it then is equal to the highest scale [*Oottumu Sahusu*]: "The half of it is named as the fine for the middling scale, and the half of "that again, is laid down for inferior crimes."

and for application of criminal punishment.

Moreover, if in any of the aforementioned crimes, prevention is not attainable, by fines regulated after the above specified scale, even a greater one may be imposed; according as *APUSTUMBU* says: "Punishment is said "to be for the sake of subduing crime; by it therefore let those bold in "crime be brought into subjection." *NARUDU* again points out some exceptions in the punishment of confiscation of a man's all: "Even when "confiscation of all a criminal possesses is enjoined, it is not fit that the king "should take away his weapons, if a soldier; the beasts of burthen or "other [conveyance], of those who subsist by carrying for hire; the ornaments, of professional prostitutes; the musical instruments, of musicians; "or those implements by which artizans subsist; in short, any thing by "which any person gains his livelihood." *YANYUWULKYU* declares the destination of a fine levied through injustice: "What has been obtained "through injustice by the king as a fine, having devoted it to *Vuroonu*, let "him give, with his own hands, increased thirty-fold, to *Brahmins*." The meaning is, 'let him give thirty times as much to *Brahmins*, having "vowed it to *Vuroonu*, through their mediation.'

General observations on punishment.

¹—As. Res. 3th, 96.

Conclusion.

Here ends the portion, called *Vyuvuharu Muyookhu*, of the Book *Bhugvutu Bhaskuru*, written by NEELKUNTHU, own son of SHUNKURU BHUTTU, he who had traversed the oceans of the *mimansa*, the head jewel of *Punditus*, son of *Bhuttu Narayun Soori*, *Juggutu Gooroo*, as requested by that ornament of the *Sunguru* dynasty, *Muharaj Adhiraj*, *Sree Bhugvuntu Devu*, the intense adorer of the lotos-eyed God, the firmly seated Raja of the noted city of *Bhurehu*, situated near the resplendent junction of the *Churmunvutee* and the *Turnija*, in the happy *Mudhyu Deshu* ¹.

1—The last para : varies in almost all the copies : some omit it altogether and others take no notice of the place mentioned, which is at the junction of the Chumbul and the Jumna ; in the printed copy, part of the passage has been inserted at the end, and part at the conclusion of the Chapter on Inheritance, but is here thrown together.

